

David Scott on the North-East Frontier of India and in Assam

A thesis submitted to the
University of London for the
degree of Doctor of Philosophy.

January 1964.

by
Nirode Kumar Barooah

**School of Oriental and African
Studies, London,**

ProQuest Number: 11015953

All rights reserved

INFORMATION TO ALL USERS

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.



ProQuest 11015953

Published by ProQuest LLC (2018). Copyright of the Dissertation is held by the Author.

All rights reserved.

This work is protected against unauthorized copying under Title 17, United States Code
Microform Edition © ProQuest LLC.

ProQuest LLC.
789 East Eisenhower Parkway
P.O. Box 1346
Ann Arbor, MI 48106 – 1346

ABSTRACT

the tribal areas of the frontier. But he was also a paternalist in his sympathetic study of the Garos, Khasis and Ahoms, and in his efforts to work for their betterment. The subject of this study is David Scott who served the East India Company on the northern and eastern frontier of the Bengal Presidency from 1802 to 1831. First coming into prominence by his handling of relations with Bhutan and Tibet during the Nepal War of 1814, Scott was successively concerned with the Garo hills, the Khasi hills and Assam, as Agent to the North East Frontier and Commissioner of Assam.

The years of his service saw a rapid British territorial expansion. They were also years wherein the duties of the British officers, agents of the Paramount power, were greatly extended. This dual growth raised the urgent question of the British purpose in India, to which conservative or paternalist, imperial, liberal, Evangelical and Utilitarian answers were variously given. This thesis sets Scott against this questioning background and seeks to define his contribution to the debate.

Scott favoured British territorial expansion, and played an important role by his advocacy of a forward policy in Assam. His imperial vision also extended to the creation of European cantonments and even military colonies in the healthy Khasi hills, the basis for a possible fourth Presidency centred upon Assam. He encouraged Christian missionary effort, and was a pioneer in advocating its application to

CONTENTS

the tribal areas of the frontier. But he was also a paternalist in his	
sympathetic study of the Garos, Khasis and Ahoms, and in his efforts	
to work through native institutions in evolving an administration for	
newly annexed Assam.	
His uncle, the Director David Scott, had been deeply involved	
in the question of Indian trade and commercial relations. Scott likewise	
actively pursued the possibilities of trade with Burma and China, and	
showed great practical enthusiasm in developing the resources and	
commerce of the areas in his charge. Thus both Scott's actions and his	
ideas are of interest and importance.	
Appendix B The Native Establishment for Upper Assam proposed	
in May 1825.	142
Appendix C The Native Establishment for Upper Assam proposed	
in May 1825.	143
Chapter V The evolution of a new administration for Assam.	
Introduction	144
Section (I) A land revenue policy for Assam.	149
Section (II) Administration of justice and police.	171
Chapter VI David Scott and the Khasi Hills.	196
Chapter VII David Scott and slavery in Assam.	225
Chapter VIII The philosophy of David Scott.	246
Appendix Epitaph on the government-built tomb of David Scott	
at Cherrapunji.	288
Bibliography	289-308
Maps.	
1. The map of North-Eastern part of Rangpur	36
2. The map of Scott's route from Sylhet to Nowgong	
via Jaintia. (from the original document).	91
3. The map of the Brahmaputra valley.	170
4. The map of the North-East-Frontier of Bengal	
in 1825 (from the original document).	Inside
	back cover.

CONTENTS

Abstract	.....	Page 2
Acknowledgement	.....	5
List of abbreviations	.....	6
Introduction	.....	7
Chapter I	<u>Frontier troubles and the ascendancy of David Scott.</u>	21
Chapter II	<u>David Scott and the Garos.</u>	37
Chapter III	<u>The external danger to the North-East Frontier and David Scott.</u>	63
Chapter IV	<u>The military defence of the north-east frontier of Assam and the question of an Ahom restoration.</u>	
Section (I)	Tranquillisation of the eastern frontier of Assam.	92
Section (II)	The question of the employment of the Assamese and the restoration of Ahom monarchy in Upper Assam.	112
Appendix A	The Native Establishment for Lower Assam proposed in May 1825.	142
Appendix B	The Native Establishment for Upper Assam proposed in May 1825.	143
Chapter V	<u>The evolution of a new administration for Assam.</u>	
Introduction	.....	144
Section (I)	A land revenue policy for Assam.	149
Section (II)	Administration of justice and police.	171
Chapter VI	<u>David Scott and the Khasi Hills.</u>	196
Chapter VII	<u>David Scott and slavery in Assam.</u>	235
Chapter VIII	<u>The philosophy of David Scott.</u>	256
Appendix	<u>Epitaph on the government-built tomb of David Scott at Cherrapunji.</u>	288
Bibliography	.....	289-308
	<u>Maps.</u>	
	1. The map of North-Eastern part of Rangpur	36
	2. The map of Scott's route from Sylhet to Nowgong via Jaintia (from the original document).	91
	3. The map of the Brahmaputra valley.	170
	4. The map of the North-East-Frontier of Bengal in 1825 (from the original document).	Inside back cover.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

List of Abbreviations.

In 1960 Dr. S.K. Bhuyan, M.A., B.L., Ph.D.(Lond.), D.Litt.(Lond.), the then Vice-Chancellor of Gauhati University, very kindly suggested the subject of my thesis.

However, when in 1961 I arrived in London the absence of any of David Scott's private papers was a positive discouragement. At Dr. K. Ballhatchet's suggestion I tried the Times Literary Supplement for information. The Times Literary Supplement published a notice which, however, failed to elicit any vital clues. But from that time onwards, I started contacting many Institutions and individuals and this slowly began to yield some useful results.

Mr. M.D.K. Turner of Southlands, Camberley, Surrey; Miss Ada P. Stearns of American Baptist Foreign Mission Society, New York; Rev. R.Emrys Evans, the General Secretary, Presbyterian Church of Wales, Liverpool; Mr. H.K. Sircar, Assistant Librarian, Carey Library, Serampore College, West Bengal; Mr. J.A. Chalmers, M.D., F.R.C.S., F.R.C.O.G., Worcester; and Mr. T. Henderson, M.A., F.E.I.S., Headmaster, Musselburg Grammar School, Musselburg, - all helped me in my search for information connected with Scott's early life and his missionary zeal.

Mr. J.B. Harrison, who supervised my thesis, was a constant source of help and encouragement. The perfection which he aimed at has been impossible to achieve. But whatever good points there are in the work, they are all due to his able guidance and direction.

My friends were all kind and helpful and to those at the International Hall of London University I owe a great deal for making my London life much more enjoyable than it would otherwise have been. Mr. Shah Shujatullah particularly was a source of great inspiration and encouragement. Another friend, Mrs. Erika Iqbal, not only typed the thesis in a short time, but also showed a keen interest in the work throughout.

To all the above mentioned persons and Institutions I am deeply grateful.

INTRODUCTION

List of Abbreviations.

The object of this thesis is to study the ideas and policies of one of the most distinguished local administrators of British India. This was David Scott, who served in north-east India from 1804 to 1831. The importance of his career lies in the fact that from his first appointment at Gerakhpur, the nature of his actions and his zeal for B.C. Board's Collections. B.C.J.C. Bengal Criminal and Judicial Consultations. B.P.C. Bengal Political Consultations. B.S.P.C. Bengal Secret and Political Consultations. C.C.O. Calcutta Christian Observer. Home Misc. Home Miscellaneous Series. J.A.S.B. Journal of Asiatic Society of Bengal. J.L.B. (1814-1816) Judicial Letters from Bengal. M.C.L.R.M. Monthly Circular Letters Regarding Missionary in India. P.A.S.M. Periodical Account of the Serampore Mission. P.L.B. Political Letters from Bengal. P.P. Parliamentary Papers. R.I.L.C. Report from the Indian Law Commissioners Relating to Slavery in the East Indies.

measure influenced by the opinions and decisions of David Scott. His ideas and actions, often unhesitatingly accepted by higher authority, gradually transformed the non-Indian character of the Ahom administration.² He also subdued and settled the hitherto uncompromisingly

1. Personal Records, Vol. XIX, PP. 27-61, a sketch of Scott's career prepared in March 1831 by Thomas Fisher; H.T. Prinsep, Register of the Hon'ble East India Company's Bengal Civil Servants, 1790-1842, P.332.
2. 'Assam in the medieval period had, as a result of its conquest by the Ahom kings from the Shan area, become non-Indian in its culture. Its early affiliation with India in the time of Kusara Bhaskara had been practically forgotten.'
K.M. Panikkar, A Survey of Indian History, P. 148.

independent tribes of the Garo and the Khasi hills and the languages of the north eastern INTRODUCTION Assam. Many of his measures were novel,

but, being considered particularly appropriate to this newly conquered

region, The object of this thesis is to study the ideas and policies

of one of the most distinguished local administrators of British India.

This was David Scott, who served in north-east India from 1804 to 1831.

The importance of his career lies in the fact that from his first

appointment at Gorakhpur¹ the nature of his duties and his zeal for

geographical and ethnological survey combined to make him an

increasingly trusted expert in the affairs of the independent or semi-

independent states of the north and north-east frontier. After the first

Nepal war (1814-1816) he became the chief channel of British contact

with Bhutan, Sikkim, Tibet, Cooch Behar, the Garo hills and Assam. The

conquest and annexation of Assam, which he had advocated, subsequently

made him the chief administrator of that state. From 1814, when he first

held charge of the Bengal district of Rangpur, until his death in 1831

at Cherrapunji, the destiny of the Assamese people was in great

measure influenced by the opinions and decisions of David Scott. His

ideas and actions, often unhesitatingly accepted by higher authority,

gradually transformed the non-Indian character of the Ahom adminis-

tration.² He also subdued and settled the hitherto uncompromisingly

1. Personal Records, Vol. XIX, PP. 27-61, a sketch of Scott's career prepared in March 1831 by Thomas Fisher; H.T. Prinsep, Register of the Hon'ble East India Company's Bengal Civil Servants, 1790-1842, P.332.

2. 'Assam in the medieval period had, as a result of its conquest by the Ahom kings from the Shan area, become non-Indian in its culture. Its early affiliation with India in the time of Kumara Bhaskara had been practically forgotten.'

K.M. Panikkar, A Survey of Indian History, P. 148.

independent tribes of the Garo and the Khasi hills and the Singphos of the north eastern frontier of Assam. Many of his measures were novel, but, being considered particularly appropriate to this newly conquered region, they secured both acceptance and considerable influence.

Yet few of the ideas and measures David Scott propounded and carried out in this transitional period of Assam's history have been studied in any detail by modern writers. About those of his earlier career, prior to his work in Assam, virtually nothing has been written. This is surprising since Scott's importance was early recognised. More than seventy years ago Alexander Mackenzie, when writing his History of the relations of the Government with the hill tribes of the North-East Frontier of Bengal,¹ declared "the most interesting and personally instructive part of my task in preparing the present volume has been the perusal of Scott's admirable reports and letters", and he regretted that he lacked the time to prepare a volume of official selections from Scott's writings. He wrote : "The name and fame of David Scott are still green on the North-East Frontier. He was one of those remarkable men who have from time to time been the ornament of our Indian services. Had the scene of his life's labours been in North-West or Central India, where the great problem of Empire was then being worked out, instead of amid the obscure jungles of Assam, he would occupy a place in history by the side of Malcolm Elphinstone and Metcalf."² Unfortunately these lines have remained merely a 'quotable quote' and nothing more than that. Forty four years later lament was still heard that "an authoritative biography of this great administrator has yet remained a

1. published in 1884. *Notes on David Scott, in Assam Review, May 1928.*

2. A. Mackenzie, op.cit., P.5 n.

desideratum, nor has any attempt been made to justify the tribute paid to his genius and attainments in the inscription on his tomb at Cherrapoonji".¹

Why then such neglect? Several reasons suggest themselves. Until recently to the general historian of India Assam has seemed a backwater, and India's North-East frontier one lacking in strategic and importance. Those who have written on Assamese history have often been concerned with a longer period and wider issues than those of David Scott's career, whose formative stages were in any case passed outside Assam. Finally David Scott may have deterred would-be biographers by failing to leave behind such private and family papers as would give colour, detail and an insight into the formation of his philosophy.

None of these reasons to-day seems sufficient bar to a study of David Scott. International events have given Assam an unlooked-for topicality and importance. There is a new or renewed interest in the ideas of the British officials at work in India, as witness works such as Eric Stokes' English Utilitarians and India. And if personal papers are lacking, official documents are many, and they describe in great detail many of Scott's more important ideas and measures. Scott had so much to say that was important and interesting, and so many controversial issues of the time were dealt with by him that the attempt must be made to depict his career from official documents and other contemporary publications and journals. Curiously enough the main handicap in studying Scott's life and career has proved to be not the absence of private papers but the

1. S.K. Bhuyan, Stray notes on David Scott, in Assam Review, May 1928.

absence of public controversy. By the time he was appointed to the chief office in Assam he had acquired so great a reputation and so much won the confidence of Government that many of his early administrative measures - especially revenue and judicial - were accepted almost without discussion by the Government at Calcutta. Enormous faith and trust were put in Scott's experience and local knowledge and he was given discretionary powers on many occasions.¹ This, we are afraid, has made the study of that part of his life mainly narrative. But the growth and development of Scott's measures, especially in Assam, a distant territory with an administrative system so very unlike that of the rest of India, are themselves perhaps sufficient, when considered in detail, to reveal the working of Scott's mind and his contribution to the non-regulation type of Government. The attempt is therefore made to view his measures and policies in relation to conditions in other parts of India, and to the attitudes of British officialdom to such conditions. In some fields, indeed, the basis of comparison is much wider, for Scott's ideas on such moral and social questions as slavery, christian evangelism, education or trade and commerce necessarily reflect the climate of opinion not only in British India but in Britain itself.

-
1. Indeed, such was the extent of the discretion granted that in 1834, three years after Scott's death, the Court of Directors reproved the Calcutta Council for "placing unlimited confidence in Mr. Scott's power of management and in allowing him to govern the country in his own way without satisfying yourself with respect to the mode in which he governed." Letter from Court, no. 14, 1834, quoted in R.M. Lahiri, The Annexation of Assam, p. 235.

C.H. Phillips, David Scott Director and Chairman of the East India Company relating to Indian Affairs 1787-1803, P. XI and n.

3. C.H. Phillips, op.cit., PP. X-XI and XI n.

4. A. Jervise, op.cit., P. 393.

5. A. Jervise, op.cit., P. 394.

David Scott was born on the 14th of May 1786 in the much
 uncle David Scott (1746-1805), whose daughter he married at a later
 respected Scott family of Usan and Dunninald in the north east of
 date.¹ Scott thus came from a family of considerable local
 Scotland, the second son of Archibald Scott.¹ His grandfather Robert
 Scott, born in 1705, was an advocate in Dunninald, a Member of
 standing, wealth and importance. He attended a good school, Musselburg
 Parliament for the County of Angus in 1732-1734, and was created a
 Academy now Musselburg Grammar School, where he studied Latin, French,
 freeholder of Forfarshire in 1743.² Robert, not only played an active
 drawing and geography besides writing, arithmetic and book keeping. The
 part in public affairs, but also, as Laird of Dunninald, took very good
 Rector of the Academy, John Taylor certified him to be meritorious and
 care of his patrimony.³ David's father, Archibald Scott, married twice.
 his 'genius and improvement' to be 'very marked at all our public
 His first wife was Elizabeth Renny of Usan, by whom he had two
 exhibitions'.³ But in his career David Scott probably found his
 daughters. The Rennys of Usan were very wealthy people and Elizabeth as
 family's standing and his own education of much less importance than
 the eldest lawful daughter of Robert Renny of Ulysseshaven had a
 the position and influence of his uncle. This uncle, Archibald's younger
 charter under the great seal (given on 12 Feb., 1751) of the lands and
 brother, was also named David Scott. After acquiring a fortune and an
 barony of Ulysseshaven with the village, tower, fortalice and the
 exceptional knowledge of Eastern trade he had returned to a distinguished
 fishery town of the same. Archibald thus in right of his wife Elizabeth -
 public career in Britain in 1786.⁴ His native place experienced the
 who died in December 1761 - became the heir of Usan.⁴

Archibald's second wife Margaret Chalmers was the daughter of
 successive parliaments for the County of Angus and for the district of
 Principal Chalmers of King's College, Aberdeen. By her Archibald had
 Burghs. The records of the East India Company amply attest the zeal and
 two sons Robert and David, and two daughters - Isabella and Anne.⁵
 talent with which for many years he helped as a Director and Chairman,
 Robert, as a nominee of Henry Dundas, went out to India in 1795 as a
 to control the affairs of that commercial body.⁵ It was through his
 writer on the Bengal Establishment and remained well acquainted with
 all the influential people in the East India affairs through his

1. Writers Petitions, Vol.17, NO. 32, enclosures attached to Scott's petition to become a writer in the Bengal Establishment.
2. A.Jervise, Epitaphs and Inscriptions from Burial Grounds and Old Buildings in the North East of Scotland Vol. II, PP.393-95;
3. C.H. Philips, The Correspondence of David Scott Director and Chairman of the East India Company relating to Indian Affairs 1787-1805. P.XI and n.
4. C.H. Philips, op.cit., PP.X-XI and XI n.
5. A.Jervise, Op.cit., P. 393.
5. A.Jervise, op.cit., P. 394.

uncle David Scott (1746-1805), whose daughter he married at a later date.¹

David Scott thus came from a family of considerable local standing, wealth and importance. He attended a good school, Musselburg Academy now Musselburg Grammar School² where he studied Latin, French, drawing and geography besides writing, arithmetic and book keeping. The Rector of the Academy, John Taylor certified him to be meritorious and his 'genius and improvement' to be 'very marked at all our public exhibitions'.³ But in his career David Scott probably found his family's standing and his own education of much less importance than the position and influence of his uncle. This uncle, Archibald's younger brother, was also named David Scott. After acquiring a fortune and an exceptional knowledge of Eastern trade he had returned to a distinguished public career in Britain in 1786.⁴ His native place experienced the full benefit of his unwearied services as one of her representatives in successive parliaments for the County of Angus and for the district of Burghs. The records of the East India Company amply attest the zeal and talent with which for many years he helped as a Director and Chairman, to control the affairs of that commercial body.⁵ It was through his

1. C.H. Philips, op.cit., Letter no.26, David Scott to William Farlie, London, 30 March 1795, p.30. See also pp. 53, 134, 159, 160, 161, 177, 284, 303, 304, 315, 357, 390, 400, 416 for Robert's relationship with D. Scott (Sr.).

2. This information has been gratefully received from Mr. T.Henderson, the Headmaster of the School.

3. Writers' Petitions, vol. 17, enclosures to petition no. 32.

4. C.H. Philips, The East India Company 1784-1834, p.72; see also C.H. Philips's Correspondence of David Scott, pp. X-XXII.

5. Ibid; and A. Jervise, op.cit., p. 395.

5. S.P. Carey, William Carey, p. 353.

uncle's recommendation while Chairman of the Court of Directors of the Company, that the younger David also got a job of a writer on the Bengal Establishment in August 1801.¹

David Scott was appointed a writer in August 1801 and on 27 January, 1802 he was selected for the service in India. He sailed into a still closer relationship of mutual support and help. To the world that same year landing in India on 15 October 1802.² On arrival he of the Serampore College Scott contributed by sending three Gares, who, joined Fort William College. In the fourth examination held at the College in January 1804 Scott attained a second class both in Hindustani and Persian.³ During his Fort William days Scott also developed a

close friendship with two persons who in later years, being in the most influential positions, probably had more effect upon Scott's career than any knowledge of Persian and Hindustani. One of these was a fellow student George Swinton, who rose to the position of the Chief Secretary to the Government of India. Swinton was an extremely brilliant student who attained the highest distinction in the College examinations which he took, along with David Scott, in 1804.⁴ Their friendship was an abiding one, and Swinton was of the greatest use in sponsoring Scott's plans and policies and in furthering his career. The other person was William Carey who was Scott's teacher in the College.⁵ Scott was a devout Christian and Carey's missionary zeal drew the young man to him.

1. Writers Petitions, vol.17, enclosure to the petition no. 32, David Scott's (senior) recommendation of his nephew.

2. H.T. Prinsep, op.cit., p. 3.

3. C.Buchanan, The College of Fort William in Bengal, pp. 194-97.

4. Swinton got a degree of Honour in Persian, a degree of honour in Hindustani, stood fifth in Arabic, took part in the public disputation in Persian, secured the second prize for Persian composition and also received an honorary reward in classics. C.Buchanan, op.cit., pp. 211-214.

5. S.P. Carey, William Carey, p. 353.

3 H.T. Prinsep, op.cit., p. 332.

When Scott was appointed to Cooch Behar and later took charge of the Rangpur with a salary of Rs. 40,000 per annum including all travelling Garo hills he used his influence to open up the hill country to and other personal charges. In addition to this laborious duty he missionary activity.¹ His correspondence with Carey at the Serampore mission headquarters became regular and their common aim brought them into a still closer relationship of mutual support and help. To the work of the Governor-General on the North-East Frontier of Bengal, with an additional allowance of 1000 rupees per month. The latter appointment together with a Punjabi, a Maratha, two Khasis, two Arakanese and several Bengalis helped to give that institution its all-India scope.²

Throughout his career Scott was kept busy in the north-eastern region of India - his headquarters shifting constantly eastwards with the development of new spheres of influence of the Company on that frontier. In August, 1804, when he quitted Fort William College he was appointed assistant to the collector of Gorakhpur. In September, 1807, he was appointed registrar of the zilla court of Gorakhpur and assistant to the magistrate, and then officiating magistrate. In March, 1812, he was made acting judge and magistrate of Purnea. In December he was sent to Rangpur as the judge and magistrate of that district. In September, 1816, he was made the commissioner in Cooch Behar and joint magistrate at Rangpur.³ While in this post Scott became deeply involved in the affairs of the Garo hill tribes. His suggestions "for promoting the general civilization of those barbarous tribes" led the Government of India to create a new post for the execution of these plans, for which of course they found no other person better qualified than Scott himself. Hence in 1822 Scott was made the civil commissioner of the North-East parts of

1 S.P. Carey, William Carey, pp. 353, 361, 401, 432-3.

2 Ibid, p. 353.

3 H.T. Prinsep, op.cit., p. 332.

Rangpur with a salary of Rs. 40,000 per annum including all travelling and other personal charges. In addition to this laborious duty he was to continue to hold the office of the commissioner of Cooch Behar. To these joint posts was added on 14 November, 1823, the office of Agent to the Governor-General on the North-East Frontier of Bengal, with an additional allowance of 1000 rupees per month. The latter appointment was occasioned by the unsatisfactory state of the relation between the British government and the Burmese. On 3 December, 1828, after the occupation of Assam, Scott was selected by the Bengal government for appointment as Commissioner of Revenue and Circuit of Assam with special powers under Regulation I of the year 1829.¹ He still retained his office as the Governor General's Agent on the North-East Frontier. This multiple situation he held till his death in August, 1831. As agent to the governor-general on the North-East Frontier of Bengal and civil commissioner at Rangpur he drew 12,000 rupees as salary and as the commissioner of revenue and circuit of Assam, North-East Rangpur, Sherpur and Sylhet from March, 1829, he drew Rs. 40,000 - a total salary of 52,000 rupees per annum.²

1 In several documents the Commissioner of Assam was addressed as 'Commissioner of Revenue and Circuit, 17th Division, Assam'. According to Regulation I of 1829 the 17th Commissioners Division comprised Sherpore and Sylhet and it was placed for a time under the Commissioner of Assam and North-East Rangpur. -

See K.N. Dutt, A Hand Book to the Old Records of the Assam Secretariat, p. 47.

2 Personal Records, vol. XIX, pp. 27-61.

3. A. White, op.cit., pp. VIII-IX.

public and private - and also from the writings of his subordinates

Just after Scott's death a Colonel Watson¹, who calls Scott his 'cousin and friend' collected 'a variety of interesting notices' about Scott's public and private life. Some of this information was incorporated in Adam White's 'Memoir of the late David Scott, Esq.', which he edited; but the rest of the materials have since been mislaid or lost.² It is particularly unfortunate that the information which Col. Watson collected about Scott's early life and education prior to his embarkation for India and for the period subsequent to his arrival in India in the year 1802 up to the first Burmese war should have been among the missing materials. The reason Watson gives for not incorporating this portion in the Memoir is described by him thus: "On considering that, after all, there could be little or nothing new to Mr. Scott's friends and connexions in anything I had written; or to speak more candidly, a distrust of my own ability to do justice to the life and character of my departed friend, finally induced me to withhold this part of the intended publication".³ However, from the little notes which he has incorporated here and there in White's Memoir and from Scott's own letters -

1. Archibald Watson (1779-1855) was the eldest son of James Watson and his wife Anne, the sixth daughter of Robert Scott of Dunninald and Usan. Archibald Watson married his cousin Anne, daughter of Archibald Scott (David Scott's father) of Usan. His career was distinguished, for going out as a cadet in 1794 he became a major-general in 1838 and lieutenant-general in 1851. He died at Abbethune on 22 August 1855, Major VCP. Hodson, List of Officers of the Bengal Army, 1758-1834, pp. 401-402.

2. Watson said that he transmitted to England most of his collection which he had received from different quarters 'not then entertaining the most distant idea of the present undertaking' (the publishing of a memoir). Unfortunately we have failed to find any trace of them anywhere in England.

3. A. White, op.cit., pp. VIII-IX.

4. J. M. Bhattacharya (ed.), Assam Burmese (of Haliram Bhaskial Phukan) Appendix, pp. 1-2. See Samachar Chandrika, March and August 1832; A. White, Memoir, pp. 39 and 40, Notes from Bengal Hurkara and The Calcutta John Bull Sept. 1831.

5. A. White, op.cit., pp. 28, 29.

public and private - and also from the writings of his subordinates much can be discerned of Scott's personality. White describes for us a stout man, weighing 13 or 15 stone always with a smile on the lips and a sparkle in his small, but lively eyes.¹ He speaks of Scott, in his private life, as "the most unassuming of human beings, and his manners of the most simple and unpretending".² He was fond of discussion and he was an excellent conversationalist. In discussion his weapon never that carried any offensive wound nor was he disposed to suppress any one with the superiority of his intellect.³

Contemporary officials were unanimous in reporting Scott's of "uniform kindness of manner" and his high sense of justice towards the natives.⁴ He also entertained a high opinion of their intellectual capacity, and Col. Watson, when he visited Scott at Gorakhpur in 1808, found that it was often a subject of complaint with him that Europeans, in general, should evince so little regard for the feelings of natives of rank or respectability with whom they had occasion to associate either in business or in the ordinary intercourse of life.⁵ With regard to the lower ranks of the natives also, Scott seldom exhibited any sense of the moral superiority of Europeans and he was full of praise for the honesty of the native servants in all matters entrusted to their charge. Scott's paternal treatment of his native servants was such that they were devotedly attached to him. Watson writes on this : "I am convinced that, to a man they would at any time, have hazarded their lives in his service,

1. A. White, op.cit., P. 67. White's Memoir, P. 25.

2. Ibid, P. 66. op.cit., PP. 55-56.

3. Ibid, PP. 57-58.

4. J.M. Bhattacharya (ed.), Assam Buranji (of Haliram Dhekial Phukan) Appendix A Nos. 7 and 8, Notes from Samachar Chandrika, March and August 1832; A. White, Memoir, App. Nos. 39 and 40, Notes from Bengal Hurkara and The Calcutta John Bull Sept. 1831.

5. A. White, op.cit., PP. 20, 25.

respectable. ¹ He was in the habit of subscribing to, and reading, the had occasion called for such a proof of their attachment". ¹ We are told that the leading feature in Scott's character was an 'enlarged and expanded' benevolence which influenced him to exert himself to advance the individual interests of all under his charge, both Europeans or native in as much as his limited means would permit. ² White informs us that Scott's official work commenced at sunrise and he remained in the Kutchery until sunset when he strolled in his garden. But even at that time if visits were paid to him he was in the habit of listening to and entering freely into conversation with the natives around him. ³

Scott is described as being possessed of a vigour and grasp of understanding rarely to be met with and one which exercised itself more readily in moral and political discussion and in scientific pursuits than in imaginative studies. At the same time his attainments as a linguist were of no mean order. ⁴ He was well acquainted with the Persian, Hindustani and Bengali ⁵ languages, and had attained considerable knowledge of the Assamese and Garo dialects. But it was the diversity of his pursuits which characterised his mind more than anything else. It is said that he was interested in philosophy, chemistry, geology, minerology, natural history, and zoology, and from his early years he had been much addicted to the study of mechanics and practical surveying. Being often alone, at a distance from medical aid, he had been compelled to study medicine and the contemporary medical officers working in his area of jurisdiction were of opinion that his proficiency therein was very

1. Col. Watson's comment in White's Memoir, P. 25.

2. A. White, op.cit., PP. 55-56.

3. Ibid, PP. 57-58.

4. Ibid, P. 52.

5. One example of Scott's knowledge of Bengali is his translation of Kishen Kant Bose's Account of Bootan printed in the volume on Political Missions to Bootan by Ashley Eden and others.

respectable.¹ He was in the habit of subscribing to, and reading, the clear that the library was not entirely serious in its practical in the different medical periodicals, and to the Medical and Physical Society contents. Fiction, chivalry, romance were all included and acquaintances of Calcutta he sent a paper on Chutwan, a febrifuge bark used amongst the natives.² Adam White writes about the range of Scott's mind : "On seeing Mr. Scott for the first time, it struck me with astonishment how he had been able to acquire this diversity of knowledge, knowing that throughout his career in India, he had been busily employed : but I ascertained afterwards, that he was in the habit of reading late at night, after his friends had left him for the evening".³

Col. Watson tells us a little more about Scott's insatiable love for books. When he visited Scott in 1808 at Gorakhpur, he found that one of the latter's main leisure occupations was general reading. He found Scott particularly interested in Chemistry and practical mechanics etc., the last chiefly in connection with his agricultural pursuits and gardening, on both of which he was extremely keen. "Scott's library then, though not extensive, was well chosen and arranged, so that the general reader was sure to find abundant amusement, and the more studious something adapted to his particular train of thought, in whatever branch of research his views might lead him. The translation of the Greek and Roman classics; some of the best historians and most celebrated writers on ^{the} subject of natural and moral philosophy and political economy; books of reference; dictionaries of most languages; ancient and modern maps etc. occupied select corners of his collection."⁴ Watson also makes it

1. A. White, op.cit., PP. 52-53.

2. Asiatic Journal 1827 Vol. 23, P. 507.

3. A. White, op.cit., P. 54.

4. Ibid, PP. 54-56 n.

clear that the library was not entirely serious and practical in its contents. Fiction, chivalry, romance were all included and acquaintance might be renewed with Defoe, Richardson, Anna Radcliffe, or even with Amadis de Gaul and the renowned son of Mandi. At a later date Scott's "own casket selection", included Rassels, Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy, Shakespeare, Thomas a Kempis, Paradise Lost, the select works of Bishop Hall and others.¹

Bold and stout as he was Scott loved mountain climbing.² Archery was his favourite game and while in the Khasi hills he acquired considerable skill in it. In his early career at Gorakhpur Scott was also particularly fond of hunting and shooting and even in Assam amidst official preoccupations he was always ready at the call of his youthful friends to join them in a tiger or boar hunt.³

The same dash and boldness, the same vigour and enterprise which he displayed in such sports he displayed in no less measure, as will be seen, in his administration or in the skirmishes in which he was involved whether with the rebel Khasis or the Burmese in Assam. of the prevailing anxiety in Gorakhpur long before its cession and then continued their incursions thereafter. They first annexed the Terai and then the parganas of Filpur and Binayakpur.³ In 1805 they claimed to

1. A. White, op.cit., PP. 54-56 n.

2. Ibid., op.cit., P. 53. Collector of Gorakhpur.

3. Ibid, P. 60. Registrar of the Zilla Court of Gorakhpur.

Officiating Magistrate of Gorakhpur. vide Personal Records, vol. XIX, p. 27; Prinsep, op.cit., p. 332; C.E. Buckland, Dictionary of Indian Biography, p. 378.

2. H.R. Nevill, Gorakhpur, p. 185.

3. Ibid, p. 186.

4. Personal Records, vol. XIX, pp. 27-28.

CHAPTER I

FRONTIER TROUBLES AND THE ASCENDENCY OF DAVID SCOTT.

The place and period of Scott's first appointment in India were alike significant for his later rise to position and fame. The place was Gorakhpur, J.H. Grant, informed the Government of this, Scott, then Gorakhpur and the period 1804 to 1811¹, years when the Nepalese by their ceaseless incursions into the borderlands of the districts' northern military action if necessary. Scott did think it necessary to move a parganas were sowing the seeds of the first Nepalese war of 1814.

Gorakhpur, in the modern Uttar Pradesh had been acquired by the East India Company in 1801. Its first district officer J. Routledge was appalled by the state of the country on his arrival. He had no reliable subordinates, no police and no adequate means of assessing or collecting the revenue; and he was constantly harassed by the presence of the discharged officials and troops who were still busily engaged in plundering the unfortunate inhabitants.² To crown all these internal disorders there was an external danger too : the Nepalese had been taking advantage of the prevailing anarchy in Gorakhpur long before its cession and they continued their incursions thereafter. They first annexed the Terai and then the parganas of Tilpur and Binayakpur.³ In 1805 they claimed to hold Butwal by right of conquest and sent officials to collect the revenue.

-
1. Aug. 1804 Asst. to the Collector of Gorakhpur.
Sept. 1807 Registrar of the Zilla Court of Gorakhpur.
 2. Oct. 1811 Officiating Magistrate of Gorakhpur.
vide Personal Records, vol. XIX, p. 27; Prinsep, op.cit., p. 332;
C.E. Buckland, Dictionary of Indian Biography, p. 378.

2. H.R. Nevill, Gorakhpur, p. 185,
3. Ibid, p. 186.
4. Personal Records, vol. XIX, pp. 27-61.

alarm of plundering incursions.¹ But his real contribution on Nepal Thereupon the Butwal raj family, in return for a pension, made over their affairs was made while he was at Rangpur. He was aided by John Adam, rights to the Company. But by 1806 the Nepalese had annexed two thirds Secretary in the secret, political and foreign department to supply of the disputed territory and they subsequently completed its annexation. information about the Nepalese and their territory, especially the country This emboldened them, for in 1810-11 they crossed the inner Butwal around Palpah.² From the military point of view, Lord Moira was boundary and seized some villages in Bansi.¹ When the collector of particularly anxious to know whether there was any route practicable for Gorakhpur, J.H. Grant, informed the Government of this, Scott, then troops, with or without artillery, from British territory to Palpah. The officiating magistrate, was asked to report on the matter and to take stock of information Scott supplied³ established his zeal for enquiry and military action if necessary. Scott did think it necessary to move a research. He gave information about the borderland and even about sepoy detachment forward, which reported the assembling of Nepalese troops territory inside Nepal, based partly on his own observation and partly on on the Bansi border.² It proved impossible to improve relations with knowledge gathered through his contact with several Nepali messengers. In them and war became inevitable.³

acknowledging Scott's letter the Governor-General complimented Scott by Gorakhpur was Scott's training ground both in internal and saying that he considered "the application of time which you were enabled frontier administration. But Scott did not stay there long. In 1812 he to spare from the performance of your ordinary official duties to the was appointed acting judge and magistrate in Purnea and in 1813, with the acquisition of knowledge which has thus become beneficial to the public same designation he was posted to Rangpur. However, Scott continued to be service to be highly creditable to your zeal, industry and spirit of useful involved in one way or another, in Nepal affairs.⁴ At Purnea he had to enquiry and research."⁴

tackle the problem of gangrobbery which prevailed on the Morung border of that district, robbery perpetuated by the predatory Nepalese. Scott Lord Moira was very impressed with Scott's "talents, address and zeal" and he desired Scott's continued help in the operations of the suggested several police measures, such as the creation of a chain of Gurkha war. It was thought essential for its prosecution that the other chokies or police posts placed as near as possible to the Morung Himalayan states like Bhutan, Sikkim and Tibet should be neutralised at boundaries and by means calculated to ensure their co-operation on every

-
1. H.R. Nevill, *Op.cit.*, p. 186.
 2. B.P.C. 17 January 1812, nos. 46-47, letter of J.H. Grant dated Oct. 1811 Scott to Dowdeswell, 30 Dec. 1811.
 3. Lord Moira, in 1813, reported that it looked as if "there could never be real peace until we should yield to the Gorkhas our provinces north of the Ganges making that river the boundary between us". A. Lamb, Britain and Chinese Central Asia, p. 37.
 4. Personal Records, vol. XIX, pp. 27-61.

alarm of plundering incursions.¹ But his real contribution on Nepal affairs was made while he was at Rangpur. He was asked by John Adam, Secretary in the secret, political and foreign department to supply information about the Nepalese and their territory, especially the country around Palpah.² From the military point of view, Lord Moira was particularly anxious to know whether there was any route practicable for troops, with or without artillery, from British territory to Palpah. The mass of information Scott supplied³ established his zeal for enquiry and research. He gave information about the borderland and even about territory inside Nepal, based partly on his own observation and partly on knowledge gathered through his contact with several Nepali messengers. In acknowledging Scott's letter the Governor-General complimented Scott by saying that he considered "the application of time which you were enabled to spare from the performance of your ordinary official duties to the acquisition of knowledge which has thus become beneficial to the public service to be highly creditable to your zeal, industry and spirit of useful enquiry and research."⁴

Lord Moira was very impressed with Scott's "talents, address and zeal" and he desired Scott's continued help in the operations of the Gurkha war. It was thought essential for its prosecution that the other Himalayan states like Bhutan, Sikkim and Tibet should be neutralised or

-
1. ~~J.L.B.~~; Personal Records, vol. XIX, p. 27, ^{J.L.B.} 1 March 1814, paras 8-12.
 2. Home Misc., vol. 644, pp. 103-5, Adam to Scott 30 July 1814.
 3. Home Misc., vol. 644, pp. 245-73, Scott to Adam 12 Aug. 1814.
 4. Home Misc., vol. 644, pp. 277-8, Adam to Scott, 9 Sept. 1814.

Home Misc., vol. 646, Papers relating to Nepal, p. 268 : Memo on Sikkim by Mr. Buchanan, and Adam to Scott, 2 Nov. 1814. See also A. Lamb, op. cit., p. 42.

3. Home Misc., Vol. 646, pp. 735-44, Adam to Scott, 24 Nov. 1814.

incited against Nepal. The latter object was not found difficult to achieve as all three states had a common grievance against Nepal. Scott was therefore entrusted with the job of collecting fresh information about the political conditions of these states, supplementing what was already known about them from Dr. Buchanan who had accompanied Captain Knox to Katmandu in 1801, and of opening official negotiations with them.¹

The old ruling family of Sikkim had obvious grievances, for some years earlier the country had been conquered by the Gurkhas and its

Two other men were involved in Sikkim - Bhutanese affairs at this time, and Scott was to come into conflict with the views of both of them. had assisted the Sikkim rulers who were linked by marriage with the lamas of Lhasa and Bhutan.² Hastings therefore hoped that the promise to restore the old princely family in Sikkim would be well received in all support to the Sikkim authorities, and H. MacLeod, the Commissioner of Cooch Behar. Captain Latter had a forceful, aggressive temperament and the raja of Sikkim and through him any other chiefs who might rise in he deplored any appeasement of the independent northern states. So, even support of the British government, that a stipulation for their future though he personally found no evidence of the rumoured Bhutanese troop-independence would be introduced into any treaty of peace which the concentration at Dullacotta, he wrote, "I must state my declared opinion British government might conclude with the Nepalese. Scott was further asked to open a channel of communication through Sikkim with Tibet and the Deb Raja of Bhutan in order to clarify the British position and to explain the origin and object of British proceedings against Nepal.³ This was very necessary since, from 1792 Nepal had been a Chinese territory and it was unknown how a British attack upon Nepal would be received by the

Chinese authorities. - one of the eleven passes extending along the

1. Home Misc., vol. 646, pp. 735-44, Adam to Scott, 26 Nov. 1814; A. Lamb, op.cit., p. 39.
2. Home Misc., vol. 646, Papers relating to Nepal, p. 268 : Memo on Sikkim by Dr. Buchanan, and Adam to Scott, 2 Nov. 1814. See also A. Lamb, op. cit., p. 42.
3. Home Misc., vol. 646, pp. 735-44, Adam to Scott, 24 Nov. 1814.

A second reason for wishing to open such contacts was that rumours were afloat that the Gurkhas had been trying to exhort the Bhutanese to join in an attack upon Sikkim and to rise against the British.¹ Any junction between them would close the best route for communication with Lhasa. There were, indeed, precise reports that the Bhutanese had assembled their troops at Dalimcotta.* Scott was therefore given the immediate task of finding out the truth of such rumours, a task which served to keep him in the public eye.²

Two other men were involved in Sikkim - Bhutanese affairs at this time, and Scott was to come into conflict with the views of both of them. They were Captain B. Latter, commanding the Company's northern frontier east of the Kosi, who in the spring of 1815 entered Morung to lend support to the Sikkim authorities, and N. MacLeod, the Commissioner of Cooch Behar. Captain Latter had a forceful, aggressive temperament and he deplored any appeasement of the independent northern states. So, even though he personally found no evidence of the rumoured Bhutanese troop-concentration at Dalimcotta, he wrote, "I must state my declared opinion that no time ought to be lost in preparing to repel aggression on the part of the Deb Raja, and any dilatory or indecisive measures might be attended with very serious consequences and, I am so convinced of the necessity of acting in the most firm and decided manner that had I

1. Home Misc., vol. 648, p. 453, Capt. Latter to MacLeod, Commissioner of Cooch Behar, 19 Nov. 1814.
- * Dalimcotta Duar - one of the eleven passes extending along the Northern Frontier of Bengal, between the Tista river on the west and Manas river on the east. Better known as Darling Fort in English.
5. vide S.N. Sen, Records in Oriental Languages: vol. I Bengali letters, p. 82 of the English section.
2. For relations with Tibet and Bhutan see A. Lamb, op.cit., ch. 2.

possessed correct information with regard to the assembling of any body of armed men I would on my own responsibility have occupied the post of Kyrantee."¹

Captain Latter's bellicose views alone could not do much harm so long as he himself was controlled by the judicial authority. But MacLeod, who invested Latter with discretionary powers to act to his best judgement on that frontier line², was also undoubtedly hasty in his judgement and policy. He had gone beyond his power by investing Latter with such power in an area where Scott as magistrate of Rangpur, possessed the controlling authority in time of peace.³ One instance of MacLeod's hasty decision was this : unhappily, he, while Commissioner in Cooch Behar, had lost all confidence in the raja of Cooch Behar. He was therefore only too ready to fall in with Captain Latter's views and even to suspect the raja of Cooch Behar of an anti-British conspiracy with the Bhutanese. Indeed he ultimately was led to charge the raja with conspiracy with the Nepalese against the Company, through Bhutanese officials at Baksa Duar. From a zinkaff, or minor Bhutanese official,⁴ MacLeod heard the story that the Cooch Behar raja had surrendered his rights over Maraghat to the Bhutanese to win their support against the British.⁵

1. Home Misc., vol. 648, p. 453, Latter to MacLeod, 19 Nov. 1814.

2. Ibid, pp. 445, Scott to Monckton, (Acting Secy. to Gvt.), 28 Nov. 1814.

3. Ibid.

4. Zinkaffs were the lowest grade officials of the Bhutan government and almost all high officials originally started their career as zinkaffs or poes (sepoys or peons) - see Babu Kishen Kant Bose, Account of Bootan, translated into English by D. Scott and incorporated in Political Missions to Bootan, p. 201.

5. S.N. Sen, op.cit., Letter no. 136, pp. 39, 161.

3. S.N. Sen, op.cit., pp. 43-44.

minds by the movements of the British troops to points contiguous to that frontier. That move was clearly defensive for no corresponding accept his agent Krishna Kant Bose at their capital, and to permit his preparations were being made by the Bhutanese on the Rangpo Frontier, going forward to Lhasa¹ was not impressed by MacLeod's slender evidence through whose passes any offensive could best be launched. It was not to or in agreement with his impetuosity. His study of the situation enabled him to give a much more considered opinion on the Bhutanese problem. He merely to support the Nepalese would involve himself in a war which would be disastrous to him. When Scott, through certain Bhutanese merchants bearance under continued aggression which has been pursued by the British subsequently gathered information that no military preparations had been government in its intercourse with the northern states, has from their made, the Calcutta authorities, confirmed in their own conclusions, came total incapacity justly to appreciate its motives had the effect of to place still greater reliance upon Scott's judgement. So while the removing in some degree that dread of its power which they formerly entertained yet the pusillanimous character of the Bhutanese and their total zeal and solicitude of Captain latter for the honour and interest of want of discipline, arms, and military means of every kind render it in government had led him to adopt that measure".² Scott secured an anonymous humble opinion highly improbable that the Deb Raja should seriously hanced reputation for level-headed expertise. He was therefore used as the think of engaging in a war in which he can gain nothing and may lose, instrument for assuring the Deb Raja that "the sole object of the British without an effort on the part of his enemy the whole of his ~~territories~~ arrangement was to chastize the Nepalese and that its operations had no territories below the hills".² Moreover he was able to show the im-connection whatever with Bhutan" and for seeking permission to send a practicability of a correspondence between the raja and the subas of agent through Bhutan to Lhasa.³ Also in January he despatched the Chamarchi and Baksa Duar, in which MacLeod had believed.³ With his judgement the vice-president of the Council at Calcutta had independently come to agree. In a letter to MacLeod, who ultimately lost his Cooch Behar commissionership, he argued that the Bhutanese had no hostile intentions. He ascribed the military preparation of the Bhutanese on their Morung frontier entirely to the impression of fear and jealousy produced on their

1. see A. Lamb, op.cit., p. 43.

2. Home Misc., Vol. 648, p. 445, Scott to Monckton, 28 Nov. 1814.

3. S.N. Sen, op.cit., pp. 43-44.

Home Misc., vol. 650, pp. 77-86, Scott to Adam, 20 January, 1815.

minds by the movements of the British troops to points contiguous to that frontier. That move was clearly defensive for no corresponding preparations were being made by the Bhutanese on the Rangpur frontier, through whose passes any offensive could best be launched. It was not to be expected that the Deb Raja, without any British provocation and merely to support the Nepalese would involve himself in a war which would be disastrous to him.¹ When Scott, through certain Bhutanese merchants subsequently gathered information that no military preparations had been made², the Calcutta authorities, confirmed in their own conclusions, came to place still greater reliance upon Scott's judgement. So while the Vice-President in Council wrote that he "would have felt regret if the zeal and solicitude of Captain Latter for the honour and interest of government had led him to adopt that measure",³ Scott acquired an enhanced reputation for level-headed expertise. He was therefore used as the instrument for assuring the Deb Raja that "the sole object of the British arrangement was to chastize the Nepalese and that its operations had no connection whatever with Bhutan" and for seeking permission to send an agent through Bhutan to Lhasa.⁴ Also in January he despatched the

1. Home Misc., vol. 648, p. 473, Monckton to MacLeod, 29 Nov. 1814.

2. Ibid, p. 461, Scott to Monckton, 30 Nov. 1814.

3. Ibid, p. 465, Monckton to Scott, 6 Dec. 1814.

4. The jealousy of the Bhutan government induced it to refuse strangers admission into the interior of the country and hence to convey the sentiment of the British government Scott was left with two alternatives : either to make a formal application which would take time or to send a person in disguise. Scott considered this latter mode of procedure "neither likely to prove agreeable to any person duly qualified for the duty in question" nor "compatible with the dignity and the views of the British government." Since the reply to his letter would cause considerable delay, Scott meanwhile thought it proper to send a concise statement of British policy towards Nepal through the zamindar of Bijni who was connected with Deb Raja.
Home Misc., vol. 650, pp. 77-86, Scott to Adam, 20 January, 1815.

5. B.P.C. 14 June 1817, no. 30, Scott to Adam, 24 May 1817.

to Rennell's map¹, as "bounded on the south by the territory of Cooch Behar, and on the north by an untraced road called the Baikunthpur road".¹

In September 1816, Scott's usefulness was recognised by his appointment as commissioner of Cooch Behar in supersession of MacLeod. The government reported to the Court of Directors that "the negotiations in which Mr. Scott had been recently employed with some of those states quiet possession of the plains of the river. Disturbances on the frontier of Maraghat and the Lohit River and the year 1809, had long been in the relations with them, peculiarly qualified him for the successful discharge of these duties".² In his new post he was expected to be "the channel for conducting on the part of the British government all business of a political nature with Bhutan, Assam, and other independent states and enquiry was completed by John Digby, Morgan's successor in the collector-Chieftains in the northern and north-eastern frontier of Rungpore".³ So, besides settling the feuds in Cooch Behar between the families of the raja, the Dewan Deo and Nazir Deo⁴, Scott found himself called upon to interfere in the boundary dispute between the Deb Raja of Bhutan and the raja of Cooch Behar. This was another case wherein his thoroughness, sincerity and impartiality could be tested.

The dispute between Cooch Behar and Bhutan was over Maraghat or to speak more precisely the lands which constituted the principal part of the local division called Gird Maraghat.⁵ Scott described it, according

1 Home Misc., vol. 650, pp. 77-86, Scott to Adam, 20 January, 1815.

2 J.L.B., 24 Oct. 1817; Personal Records, vol. XIX, pp. 27-61; B.P.C. 26 Oct. 1816, no. 71.

3 Ibid.

4 For this feud and its settlement see S.N. Sen, op.cit., pp. 1-31, and pp. IV-X of the English section; A.A. Khan Chaudhury A History of Cooch Behar. Part I. pp. 193-230. Messieurs Mercer and Chauvets, Report on Cooch Behar. 1788, in 'The Cooch Behar Select Records, II.'

5 B.P.C. 14 June 1817, no. 30, Scott to Adam, 24 May 1817.

to Rennell's map¹, as "bounded on the south by the territory of Cooch Behar, and on the north by an ancient road called the Bhangamallee, on the west by the Joldhoka river and on the east by the Manshi or rather by a branch of that river running somewhat westward of its course as laid down in the map". With the exception of twenty-six insignificant hamlets the tract in question, previously to the year 1809, had long been in the quiet possession of the Bhutan government. Disturbances on the frontier of Maraghat and the Lakhi Duar* about the end of the year 1808 led to Company troops being despatched for the protection of the raja of Cooch Behar's territory. An enquiry was started soon after by James Morgan the then Collector of Rangpur and ex-officio Resident of Cooch Behar. This enquiry was completed by John Digby, Morgan's successor in the collectorship of Rangpur. Their verdict was that the lands formed a part of the Cooch Behar territory. The raja consequently took possession of them in the year 1811-12.²

Scott found sufficient grounds to believe that the enquiry of Morgan and Digby had not been sufficiently full and detailed, and that they had failed to note the earlier decision of the Dinajpur Council, who after consulting Charles Purlings's³ own handwritten document, had

1. This map was published in England in 1779 and the materials for it must, consequently, have been collected several years before the date of the alleged usurpation of the Bhutanese and probably consisted of the survey of the frontier executed after the peace with Bhutan. B.P.C. 10 Oct. 1817, no. 43, Scott to Lushington, 18 Aug. 1817.

* Lakhi Duar is one of the eleven passes extending along the Northern Frontier of Bengal and is situated between the Tista river on the west and Manas on the east. vide S.N. Sen, op.cit., p. 88 of the English section.

2. They were : Chachakhata, Paclahat, Lakhi Duar and Kizanti. B.P.C. 14 June 1817, no. 30, Scott to Adam, 24 May 1817.

3. Charles Purlings was the Asst. at Dinajpur or Rangpur in 1771 and negotiated the treaty with the raja of Cooch Behar in 1772. He became the collector of Rangpur for 1777-1790. For details of his career see Bengal Past and Present, vol. XIV.

declared in 1777 that Maraghat along with some other spots¹, was the possession of Bhutan. Scott therefore reported "although it appeared to me ... that a mere reference to the decree of the Dinajpore Council and to the Raja of Cooch Behar's own statement of his claims was quite sufficient to show that they were totally destitute of foundation yet in order to satisfy the parties and prevent any representations of their witnesses not having been examined, I proceeded to Maraghat in the beginning of January and during fifteen days examined all such persons as the agents of the Bhutan government and of the Raja of Cooch Behar thought fit to bring forward for the purpose of proving the time and mode of obtaining possession of Maraghat".² Scott stated that when war broke out between Bhutan and Cooch Behar in 1772 and the Company moved in support of the latter, the area in question had been occupied by British troops who defeated the Bhutanese near the Bhangamali road. Under the peace treaty negotiated by Boyle with the Deb Raja in 1775, which Warren Hastings deliberately made a lenient one, the area was restored to the Bhutanese though without any formal settlement of boundaries.³ Some years later in 1780 or 1781 Narendra Narayan Kunwar, as representative of the Cooch Behar royal family, came and possessed himself of the land of Maraghat, or "as one of the witnesses stated, merely plundered the ryots and created a fort from which he was very soon obliged to retire."

In the course of a few months after his first appearance he was killed

at Bhuthat by the Bhutanese and from that time to the year 1809, the

Deb Raja always held undisputed possession of the lands, excepting the

1. They were : Chachakhata, Paglahat, Lakhi Duar and Kiranti.
See S.N. Sen, op.cit., p. 46.
2. B.P.C. 14 June 1817, no. 30, Scott to Adam, 24 May 1817.
3. For these early relations with Bhutan, see A. Lamb, op.cit., pp.8-14.

twenty-six challas or hamlets belonging to the Cooch Behar raja.¹ Scott concluded that, taking account of the decree of the Dinajpur Council, the 1775 treaty of peace with Bhutan, and of the acknowledged Bhutanese possession of the lands from within a very few years after the execution of those documents to the year 1809 the claim of the Cooch Behar raja could only be properly allowed in Mauja Maraghat* (comprising the twenty-six hamlets and farms) and not in Gird Maraghat which was the absolute property of the Deb Raja. The Government was satisfied with Scott's findings and ordered that Gird Maraghat should be restored to the Deb Raja. Scott explained the case to Cooch Behar and asked for the hitherto disputed lands to be handed over, together with an account of the collections made in Maraghat during the Cooch Behari occupation of the place.² In 1818 the Deb Raja informed Scott that Dewan Krishna Kant had handed over possession of the disputed land to Chito Tandi, his representative.³

Mention of Krishna Kant Bose recalls that this was the man whom Scott had sent as his agent to Bhutan, in 1815, in the hope that he would open up a line of communication with Tibet, via Bhutan. He failed in that object - Scott blaming his lack of discretion⁴ - but he did acquire a considerable knowledge of Bhutanese affairs, he was able to assist in the settlement of the Cooch Behar border dispute, and it was he

1. B.P.C. 14 June 1817, no. 30, Scott to Adam, 24 May 1817.

* Mauja Maraghat covered an area of 3,065 bighas of land.
vide A. Ahmed, History of Cooch Behar (in Bengali), pp. 355-6.

2. B.P.C. 14 June 1817, no. 31, Adam to Scott, 14 June 1817.

3. S.N. Sen, op.cit., pp. 48-51.

4. See A. Lamb, op.cit., p.43. But it should be mentioned that Scott wrote to the Government at a later date that 'no capable person but himself (Krishna Kant) could be found to undertake the business'.

B.P.C. 24 Nov. 1821, no. 81, Scott to Swinton, 21 Sept. 1821; 1817. Board's Collections, vol. 810/21724, pp. 12-13.

merchants nor ryots would be safe from plunder by the Bhutanese. Scott's wild action he believed "would entirely alter the complexion of the who in 1816 first reported the arrival of a Chinese force at Lhasa which was for a time to cause Lord Moira considerable alarm.¹ No less important he produced an Account of Bootan², written in Bengali but translated by David Scott, which contained a full description of the territory, with an elaborate discussion of the administrative system, its economic products, and of the routes leading to it, and which won the praise of such later envoys as R.B. Pemberton and Sir Ashley Eden. Kishen Kant also produced a work on the grammar and vocabulary of the Bhutanese language.³

One purpose of Kishen Kant Bose's mission had been to check the reports of a Bhutanese military threat which had been current in 1815, and which had roused the truculence of Captain Latter. Those reports had proved false, but in 1817 there was a real source of conflict when the Bhutanese began stopping boats on the Tista river and demanding duties from the merchants cutting timber in the tract of country ceded to the Company by the Gurkhas between that river and the Mahanadi.⁴ Scott responded by sending an agent to enquire of the Deb Raja by what authority the demands were made. This was once again too mild a proceeding for Captain Latter, now agent for the Government in the ceded Morung pargana. Latter wanted immediate action, and he wrote to Calcutta pointing out that the tract had been ceded to the Company, that the exactions were unauthorised, and that if they were not forcibly resisted neither

-
- 1 A. Lamb, op.cit., p. 46.
 - 2 B.C., vol. 810/21724, pp. 21-133. The published version is included in Political Missions to Bootan by Ashley Eden and others, pp. 187-206.
 - 3 B.C., vol. 810/21724, pp. 1-21.
 - 4 B.P.C. 19 Sept. 1817, nos. 68-70, Scott to Lushington, 6 Sept. 1817, Latter to Scott, 11 July 1817 and 2 Sept. 1817.

merchants nor ryots would be safe from plunder by the Bhutanese. Scott's mild action he believed "would entirely alter the complexion of the business and in my opinion lead to endless discussion ... if this should be done it would probably induce ^{the} Bhutias to advance a joint claim to the forests itself for they have just as much right to one as the other."¹ On this occasion the Calcutta Council agreed with Latter², but before any action had been taken, Scott was able to report that the Deb Raja had replied, disclaiming the acts of those who had exacted money from the merchants and stating that positive orders had been issued to the subah of Dalimcotta to desist from such claims and release the persons stated to have confined.³ Scott's methods were thus vindicated, and his influence displayed, and not until 1832 were there any further disturbances on the Bhutan frontier.

It is clear from the narrative of events in this chapter that one of the main weakness in the Company's position on the northern frontier was that it lacked adequate means of communicating with its neighbours. In the Nepal war it had had to rely on the reports of adventurous travellers, upon bazar gossip, and upon the hurried despatch of such agents as Krishna Kant Bose by Scott to ascertain Bhutanese intentions, or to explain its own to the Chinese authorities in Lhasa. Scott had gathered agents and interpreters on an ad-hoc basis, but something permanent was evidently required. Finally in November, 1823 a single individual was given responsibility for the whole frontier region, and a

1. B.P.C. 19 Sept. 1817, no. 70, Latter to Lushington (private) 10 Sept. 1817.
2. B.P.C. 19 Sept. 1817, no. 71, Lushington to Latter, 19 Sept. 1817.
3. B.P.C. 13 Oct. 1817, no. 37, Scott to Lushington, 19 Sept. 1817.

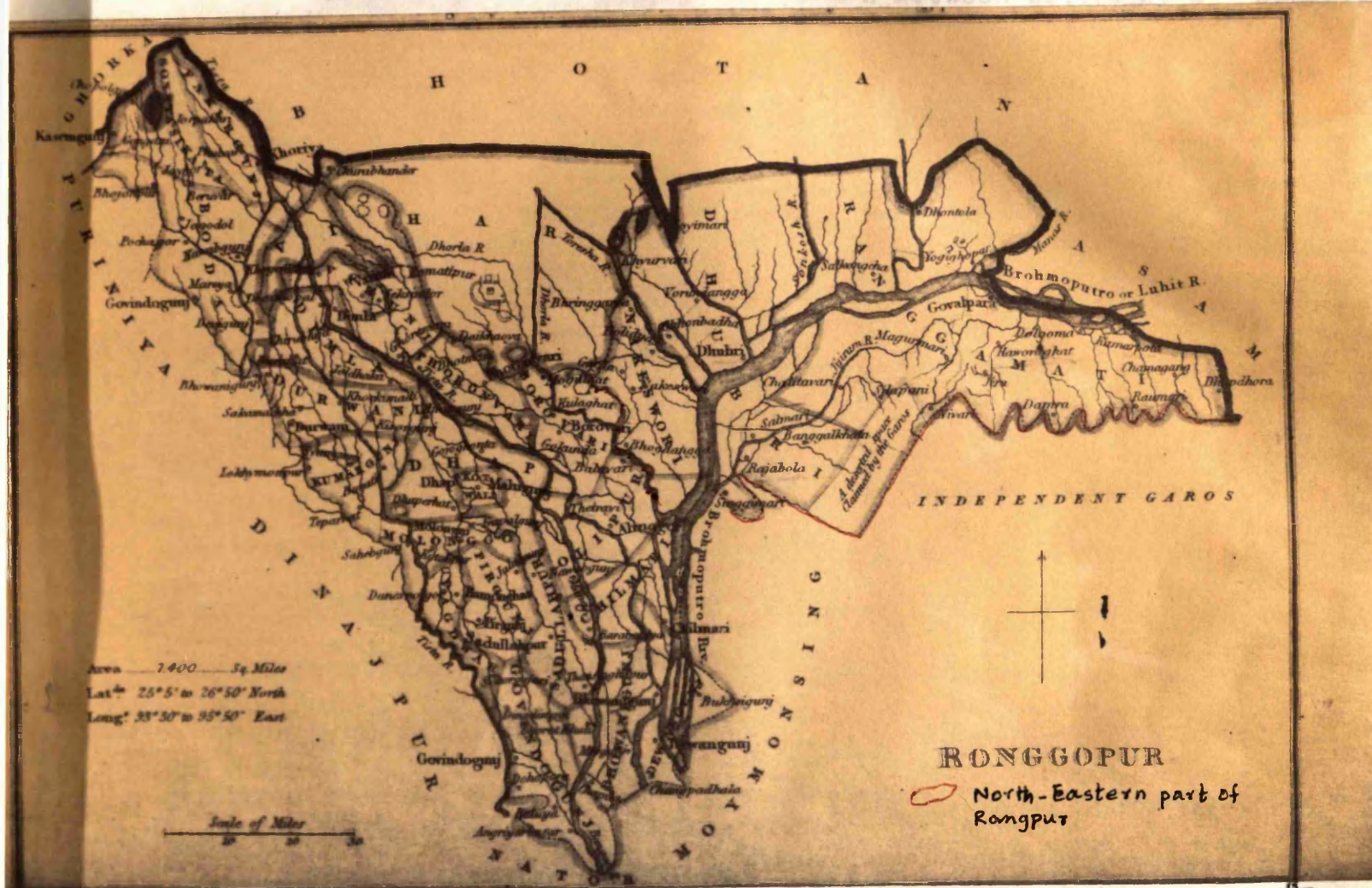
monthly establishment on 1,256 rupees for the maintenance of a staff capable of treating with all the neighbouring states. The man chosen to be Agent to the Governor-General on the North-East Frontier was of course David Scott, and he was given an officer of recognised linguistic attainments, Siddon, as translator in his office. Scott assembled a team of seven interpreters and twelve messengers, speaking Lepcha, Bhutia, Tibetan, Burmese, Manipuri, Khasi and Assamese, who assisted Siddon in the preparation of grammars and vocabularies.¹ The special needs and problems of frontier control were thus recognised and provided for and Scott's mastery proclaimed and given still wider scope.

1. B.S.P.C. 6 August 1824, no. 30, Scott to Swinton, 16 July 1824.

In G.A. Grierson's stupendous work, Linguistic Survey of India we do not find any mention about these grammars and vocabularies, but the official records show the good use made of them. For example, on Dr. H. Carey's suggestion the grammar and vocabulary of Bhutan prepared by Krishna Kant Bose were transmitted to Fort William College for use. On these particular works Scott opined "the chief merit of the performance is the perfect accuracy with which the pronounciation of the letters and words has been marked."
Board's Collections, vol. 810/21724, pp. 1-21.

CHAPTER II

THE SCOTT AND THE GAROS



Foreign language and by the peculiar manners and laws of India, and by the manners of its inhabitants." Says, with equal conviction boasted, "Our English rulers are not now chargeable with obliqueness of their ob-

1. F. Spear, India: A Modern History, p. 214.
2. L.S.S. O'Malley, History of Bihar and Orissa under British rule, pp. 370-1.
3. F. Spear, India: A Modern History, p. 214.

CHAPTER II

DAVID SCOTT AND THE GAROS

In many parts of India, the period between Wellesley's 'abortive attempt at supremacy' and Hastings' achievement of it, was one of administrative deterioration.¹ The Indian states system was crumbling; British rule was not yet firmly seated : it was a time of opportunity for the strong and ruthless. This was evidently so in Pindari-ridden Central India, but true also of more obscure corners like the north-east frontier the Garo hills corresponds closely with the topography - that is, the district ends exactly where the hills end. Its boundaries approximate Mechpara and Habraghat.

But the Company's government, in these same years, was increasingly reluctant to ignore disorder outside its borders and readier to accept new duties and responsibilities within them. Wellesley had declared, "The civil servants of the East India Company can no longer be considered as the Agents of a commercial concern their duties are those of statesmen in every other part of the world, with no other characteristic differences than the obstacles opposed by an unfavourable climate, by a quantity of the precious wood called salar. Their estates were never subjected to a land revenue assessment, but they were obliged to maintain foreign language and by the peculiar usages and laws of India, and by the manners of its inhabitants."² Kaye, with equal conviction boasted, "Our English rulers are not now chargeable with obliviousness of their ob-

1. P. Spear, India : A Modern History, p. 214.
2. L.S.S. O'Malley, History of Bengal Bihar and Orissa under British rule, pp. 290-1.

ligations as representatives of christianity and agents of civilization."1 Scott's share in the general process during the years 1815 to 1821 when, as commissioner of Cooch Behar and judge-magistrate of Rangpur he was responsible for the Garo frontiers, is the subject of this chapter.

The present Garo Hills district, constituted in 1869, is a mountainous area of some three thousand square miles, lying above the plains districts of Rangpur and Mymensing. Its inhabitants, the Garos, are a section of the great Bodo race which at one time occupied much of the Brahmaputra valley, but which probably was driven into the hills by the early Hindu invaders from Bengal.² The present political district of the Garo hills corresponds closely with the topography - that is, the district ends exactly where the hills end. Its boundary also approximates the ethnic boundary between the Garos and other groups.³ But in Mughal times, at the foot of the hills, Hindu chiefs were found holding a number of great estates embracing many Garo villages. In return for a small tribute paid to the Mughal faujdar of Rangamati as token of fealty to the Mughal emperor these chiefs or zamindars were confirmed in their marcher lordships. The tribute took the form of a number of elephants or a small quantity of the precious wood called aghur. Their estates were never subjected to a land revenue assessment, but they were obliged to maintain certain petty garrisons, to contribute to the maintenance of the Dacca artillery park, and to collect and pay sair or miscellaneous duties. These

1. J.W. Kaye, Administration of the East India Company, p. 463.
2. B.C. Allen, and others, Eastern Bengal and Assam, pp. 500-502; A. Playfair, The Garos, p. 1. M. Serajuddin, who has prepared a history of the Garos, The Garos, pp. 18-19. Administration of Chittagong 1761-1782, to be submitted to the London University in January 1964, has fully dealt with Kapas mahal.

1 A. Mackenzie, op.cit., p. 245.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid, pp. 245-246.

payments were usually made in cotton*, grown in the Garo hills.¹ In these payments the Mughal faujdar was further concerned because he usually financed the purchase of the cotton by advances to the zamindars. So long as the faujdar paid the stipulated revenue to the Mughal authorities of Dacca his transactions with the zamindars never came into question. The profits of these cotton dealings were his own concern. For the zamindars the advantage of the system was, of course, that the faujdar encouraged and supported the extension of their control over the Garo villages and their reduction of those villages to revenue payment.²

When the East India Company acquired the Diwani of Bengal they inherited this system. It was left unchanged. The function of the faujdar as an intermediary was taken over by a sazawal, annually appointed, who contracted to pay the district revenues to the Government, making his own arrangements for collecting them from the zamindars. They in their turn, as independent as before, collected the revenues of their zamindaries, and paid them over to the sazawal in cotton. In 1788, however, the Company abolished sair dues and made the collection of such miscellaneous cesses illegal. The zamindars who had always enjoyed a percentage of the revenues they collected, were compensated for the loss of the sair dues.³

Scott's attention, as judge-magistrate, was drawn to the Garo frontier, not by any such revenue question, but by various outrages and acts of violence committed by the Garos in January and February of 1815

* This revenue paid in cotton by the hill chiefs can be compared with Kapas mahal or cotton revenue collected from the hill tracts of Chittagong from 1713 - Mr. A.M. Serajuddin, who has prepared a doctoral thesis on the The Revenue Administration of Chittagong 1761-1785, to be submitted to the London University in January 1964, has fully dealt with Kapas mahal.

1 A. Mackenzie, op.cit., p. 245.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid, pp. 245-246.

upon the inhabitants of the frontier zamindari of Kalumalupara and Karaibari.¹ His determination to eradicate such evils, by eliminating their causes, led him to a sustained investigation of the relations between the Garos and the zamindars along the foothills.² The Company had hitherto known little of the relationships, and like the Mughals had cared little so long as the revenues were paid. The causes of the Garo risings were therefore not understood until Scott undertook his enquiries and produced his report of the 20th August, 1816.

Scott found that the **four** great zamindars of the frontier had all sought to reduce the Garos to a tributary or completely subject status. In Karaibari the vigorous measures adopted by the former zamindars had enabled them to reduce the greater part of the Garos on the estate to the condition of the other ryots. Only a few of the Garo frontier chiefs still remained on a tributary footing, supplying cotton on terms highly favourable to the zamindar, and making considerable money payments, nominally gifts at the festivals, but really extorted by threat of the zamindar's displeasure.

In Kalumalupara the original zamindari family was less vigorous, and the Garos contiguous to the estate had merely paid tribute. When the whole of the pargana was sold for revenue arrears the purchaser lost all authority over them, though some chiefs still took a few rupees advance and delivered a small quantity of cotton.

-
1. B.C.J.C. 7 Feb. 1815, nos. 19-23, Scott to Bayley 16 Jan. 1815, 17 Jan. 1815, 25 Jan. 1815; Latter to Scott 21 Jan. 1815; Bayley to Scott 7 Feb. 1815.
 2. J.L.B., vol. 4, 7 Oct. 1815, paras 261-271; B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, nos. 15-16, Scott to Bayley, 16 Jan. 1816 and 31 Jan. 1816.
 3. N. Ahmed, *An Economic Geography of East Pakistan*, p. 78.

In Mechpara the zamindars, especially in the years 1776 and 1777, through the haths established on their estates, partly by continuing had made extensive conquests, but a minor succeeding soon after, most of quite illegally to exact cotton and other payments. Even after these had been lost by 1816. Only a few outlying Garo villages in the plains remained assimilated, and subject to the regulations of government. When the Regulations of 1793 were promulgated the inhabitants of the Garo villages on the conquered tracts were much too independent to submit to such a code of laws. But for many years they continued to submit to the authority of the zamindars as their judges and to deliver their cotton, as tribute or revenue, on the established terms. In the hill tracts the chiefs were merely tributary, paying cotton on favourable terms and occasionally admitting the zamindar as their criminal judge.

In Habraghat, the last estate on the left bank of the Brahmaputra and towards the Assam side the zamindar had adopted the most successful measures of all. The Garos of the plains villages and of the first range of hills had all been reduced to unconditional subjection to the laws and regulations of Bengal. Their sardars had been transformed into jagirdars, charged with defence of the passes. The clans further within the hills, on the other hand, had been released from all dependence on or connection with the zamindar, except such as resulted from their resorting to the haths (markets) on his estate.¹

These various political relationships were the result, as Scott pointed out of two generations of conflict, waged without interference from the government.² In the same years an explosive economic relationship had been established. Garo cotton, though coarse and of short staple and useful mainly for stuffing or adulteration³, was a main item in the eastern internal trade.⁴ Over this the zamindars secured control, partly

1. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 30-36.

2. Statements of Ramrag Sardar, RamDany Sardar and Dany Sing Sardar taken in the thana of Dhubri in zilla Rangpur on 7th April 1816. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 48, enclosures 1, 2 and 3.

3. A. Playfair, op.cit., p. XV.

4. N. Ahmed, An Economic Geography of East Pakistan, p. 78.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid.

therefore, for eight rupees worth of salt, which, were there no monopoly through the haths established on their estates, partly by continuing or duties except the Company's, would cost about rupees, gives 3 mans quite illegally to exact sair and other payments in cotton, even after their abolition in 1788.¹

When the Regulations on 1793 were promulgated the inhabitants of the Garo villages on the conquered tracts were much too independent to submit to such a code of laws. But for many years they continued to submit to the authority of the zamindars as their judges and to deliver their cotton, as tribute or revenue, on the established terms.²

But the diffusion of British authority in Bengal had two results. As the Garo became aware that the zamindars had lost the right to enforce their demands for dues, they came openly to assert their independence and to demand redress or revenge for their grievances. They complained that heavy dues were exacted at the zamindari haths, that advances were forced upon them for the supply of cotton which was then taken at only about one sixth of its real value, that fines were levied from whole villages for any criminal offence and that wholesale seizure and imprisonment of the inhabitants was likewise inflicted.³ That such grievances were real is to be seen from the account of the working of such a hath in the Habraghat zamindari given by Montgomery Martin. "At each market place a person who paid a rent to the Vijni Raja kept a ware house for salt. This he sold to petty traders at eight rupees a man ($84 \frac{10}{16}$ s.w. a ser). The petty trader, adding clay and water, increased its weight $1/8$ part, and then exchanged it with the Garos, at one man of salt for three mans of cotton. The Garo

1 B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 37-42; B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 48, enclosures 1, 2 and 3, statements of Ramrag Sardar and others at Dhubri on 7 April 1816.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid.

therefore, for eight rupees worth of salt, which, were there no monopoly or duties except the Company's, would cost about $5\frac{1}{2}$ rupees, gives 3 mans 15 sers of cotton in the seed, which at Goalpara is usually worth 5 rupees the man. He besides pays a share of the cotton to the Raja, for permission to trade in his market."¹

At the same time to the Garos the weakening of the zamindars' police and military power made forcible retaliation more tempting. Although they had the duty of guarding the passes, the zamindars no longer maintained large military establishments preferring to rely on occasional punitive expeditions rather than make a sustained effort to guard the settled villages.² The Garos had a tradition of raiding, for they believed that the spirits of their headmen required the souls of others to attend them, they had real grievances, they had opportunity for revenge. There was thus both an element of the universal warfare of the hills upon the plains and of that social banditry which Hobsbawn calls the "endemic peasant protest against oppression and poverty, a cry for vengeance on the rich and the oppressors."³ The Garos, Scott reported, would descend on Kalumalupara demanding pigs, goats, fowls or such other articles as took their fancy, and the ryots, knowing there was nothing to deter the hillmen, complied. If the raid was not attended with violence or murder it was seldom reported, for the sufferers had repeatedly seen people of consequence murdered and their houses plundered with perfect impunity. When

1. M. Martin, Eastern India, vol. III, pp. 686-7.

2. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 23-24; B.C. Allen and others, op.cit., p. 502.

3. E.J. Hobsbawn, Primitive Rebels, p.5.

5. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, no. 17, Scott to Bayley 31 Jan. 1816.

6. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, no. 18, Bayley to Scott 16 Feb. 1816.

such acts became too frequent for endurance they either used to desert the villages or purchase the forbearance of the Garos by an additional donation of mata-rakha or blackmail.¹

Lord Hastings Scott's first measures against the Garo raiders were military action and institution of an economic blockade by closing the haths - the two traditional remedies.² Though the war with Nepal made inconvenient any drastic military action against the Garos, he was given the service of Lt. Davidson, the officer commanding the local corps at Sylhet, and was authorised to employ eastward of the Brahmaputra any of the burkandazes or guards who could be spared from the sadr stations or from the police thanas of the district of Rangpur.³ But Scott soon discovered that the causes of these outrages were too deep-rooted to be solved by military show or one or two severe military measures.⁴ Scott asked the Supreme Government the significant question whether "the state of things which obtains in the pargana east of the Brahmaputra is not such as to justify the suspension of the ordinary course of law."⁵ In other words, Scott doubted whether the existing Bengal Regulations were suitable for the inhabitants of the area.

The Supreme Government at Calcutta approved of Scott's punitive measures, noted his suggestions about change in the Regulations⁶, but asked that he should make further inquiries into the topography of the

1. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, no. 15, Scott to Bayley 16 Jan. 1816.

2. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, nos. 15-18, Scott to Bayley 16 Jan. 1816, Bayley to Scott, 16 Feb. 1816.

3. Ibid. tract of country, from Government, it appears to be that their

4. Ibid.

5. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, no. 17, Scott to Bayley 31 Jan. 1816.

6. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, no. 18, Bayley to Scott 16 Feb. 1816.

1. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, no. 18, Bayley to Scott 16 Feb. 1816.

country, the habits and the character of the tribes and their motives before endeavouring ^{to make} any change in the existing order. Scott was given extra allowances for touring in the Garo frontier. The governor-general, Lord Hastings, further asked Scott whether a system of internal management similar to that successfully applied by Cleveland in the hills of Bhagalpur, could be introduced into the Garo hills. In particular he asked Scott to consider the establishment of a small local corps, mainly of Garo hillmen, to be stationed on the frontier at the haths and passes; the permanent posting of an officer in that part of Rangpur lying east of the Brahmaputra, vested with civil and criminal powers; and the regulation of trade so as to encourage commercial intercourse with the Garos and other frontier tribes.¹

To these instructions and queries, issued in February, Scott replied after months of touring the areas inhabited by the dependent and tributary Garos, with a statement outlining his major conclusions, on 20 August, 1816.

His first conclusion was that the zamindars' assertions that the Garo villages which they had subdued formed a part of the estates upon which they paid revenue was totally groundless. But if the zamindars had no revenue rights over the Garo hills were they then within British jurisdiction at all, and if so, in what sense? Scott put forward the interesting argument that "whatever may have been the motive of the chaudhuries (zamindars) for concealing the real nature of their interests

1. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, in this tract of country, from Government, it appears to me that their conquests if made at the time they held their estates, for the defence of the frontier, must be considered as legal acquisitions conferring a right

1. B.C.J.C. 16 Feb. 1816, no. 18, Bayley to Scott 16 Feb. 1816.

on the British government as the superior of the conquerors, to sovereignty of the country subdued."¹ Scott went on to add, "the zamindars themselves after being released from the responsibility of defending the country, and deprived of the official character in which they acquired these territories, cannot be entitled, as mere individuals, and subjects, to derive any pecuniary profit from the lands which have all along continued in the hands of the original occupants and of their descendants over whom the zamindars have rather exercised the right of property appertaining to the sovereign than those of mere land holders."² Scott thus argued that the British government had the right to step over the heads of the zamindars since they failed to perform the duties of defence laid on them by the Government, and make its own arrangements with the Garos.

Scott next considered the applicability to the Garo hills of Cleveland's system in Bhagalpur. Cleveland in 1778 had allotted subsidies to the headmen of the Mal Paharias and had supported the influence thus acquired by raising a corps of 400 Mal Paharias archers which functioned as an effective police force, keeping order in the hills by tribal methods, and enforcing the decisions of the tribunal created by Cleveland and known as the Hill Assembly.³ Such expedients Scott did not think would work among the Garos. He pointed out that when Cleveland introduced British authority into the Bhagalpur hills the inhabitants appeared to have been governed by a regular gradation of chiefs whose authority was

1. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, para 49.

2. Ibid. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816.

3. J.H. Hutton, Primitive Tribes in O'Malley's Modern India and the West, p. 418. "There can hardly be an aboriginal tribe in India more easily circumstanced than the Garos. Real famine never touches them."

A. Playfair, op.cit., p. 4.

2. Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 25-27.

undisputed. These persons had first been taught to respect the British government's power by repeated and severe chastisement for their inroads upon the plains. Then they had been induced to relinquish the raiding to which they were driven by their extreme poverty by the grant of adequate subsidies. They had thereby been made into ready and willing instruments for the control and management of their fellow countrymen.¹

The Garos, by contrast, were rich*, and their leading men were unlikely to be tempted by the subsidies which had such weight with the Bhagalpur chiefs. Moreover Garo society was very democratic : the Garos exultingly compared their country to a crab, which they affirm has no head. Whatever, then, might be the force of influence which the Garo chiefs acquired from personal character, extensive family connections or wealth, their good will, Scott believed would be of little political value to the Company. However efficient a popular chief might prove in commanding the service of numerous followers for external warfare, or even in the exercise of arbitrary power at home, such leadership was still far from being consolidated into any system of acknowledged legal authority. An influence founded principally, if not solely, upon public opinion was evidently not capable of being instrumental to any purpose obnoxious to the chiefs. Scott also set out a detailed plan for exploiting their co-operation in the control of their clansmen. He proposed that up to one thousand rupees a year might be put at the disposal of the Garo chiefs for distribution in presents to those Garo chiefs who had been receiving blackmail from the plains villages. Such grants, and permission to trade at the baths during the ensuing cold season should only be granted after

Under such circumstances, Scott held that the introduction of British authority amongst the Garos, merely by winning over the chiefs was quite impracticable. Instead, a direct connexion with the tribes should be established, if necessary, imposed by force. Since the Garos,

1. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 25-27.

* "There can hardly be another aboriginal tribe in India more easily circumstanced than the Garos. Real famine never touches them." A. Playfair, op.cit., p.4.

2. Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 25-27.

though in the past merely tributaries of the zamindars, currently were more or less dependent upon them, Scott felt that the British were in a position forcibly to intervene in their affairs.¹

Scott therefore recommended that the Garo villages should be brought directly under government control and that a special code of regulations should be applied to them. With the exception of ~~the~~ those in Habraghat all the Garo villages over which the zamindars had exercised authority, but which had neither been recorded in the Collector's office nor subject to the Bengal Code, should be placed under the immediate superintendence of a British official. If the zamindars appeared entitled to compensation they should be allowed a deduction from their revenue payments. Thereafter special rules should be worked out for the internal management of the inhabitants. These rules should provide both for the security of British subjects and eventually for the improvement of the Garos themselves. But for the present British interference with the 'protected' Garos ought to be extremely limited : they should be required to make a simple acknowledgement of the supremacy of Government by paying a trifling tribute.

Despite his earlier statements about the limited influence of revenue being granted to the zamindars, for use as a market place and for the chiefs, Scott also set out a detailed plan for enlisting their co-warehousing. The rent of the ground appropriated to warehouses would operation in the control of their clansmen. He proposed that up to one thousand rupees a year might be put at the disposal of the magistrate for distribution in presents to those Garo chiefs who had been receiving markets. Scott estimated expenditure at about 3000 rupees and the probable tax yield at 30,000 rupees since he calculated that cotton sales amounted at the haths during the ensuing cold season should only be granted after

1. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, para 28.
2. paras 52-53.

the Garo sardars or headmen, of the frontier villages had subscribed to some seven conditions.¹

These conditions were that they should pay an annual tribute, in cotton, in acknowledgement of the supremacy of the Company; that they should stand surety for one another, and for the appearance of their dependants and villages; that they and their dependants should refrain from outrages upon the ryots, surrender any raider seeking refuge in their para, and cease to keep human skulls in their houses; that they should report any plans for raiding that might come to their knowledge; that they should come unarmed to the haths, abandon all claims to exact perquisites, pay fair prices and engage to refer all differences to the police muharrir of the hath, abiding by the magistrate; that they should allow the interpreters and officers of government to enter their villages without molestation; and finally, that if they should break the foregoing conditions their houses and other property should be considered subject to confiscation by the magistrate.²

To encourage peaceful trade Scott further suggested that 50 acres at each station ought to be taken by government, adequate remission of revenue being granted to the zamindars, for use as a market place and for warehousing. The rent of the ground appropriated to warehouses would cover the remission of revenue while a sales tax of 12 annas per maund of cotton would very much more than cover the cost of managing the markets. Scott estimated expenditure at about 3000 rupees and the probable tax yield at 30,000 rupees since he calculated that cotton sales amounted

1. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 50-51.

2. Ibid, paras 52-53.

to eight thousand maunds at Habraghat, ten at Mechpara, twelve at Kalumalupara, ten at Karaibari, or a total of forty thousand maunds.¹

The revenues to be expected from the Garo haths were considered by Scott, sufficient to meet the expenses of a native judicial establishment, a local corps and a Garo hath police, which he estimated as follows

Judicial establishment	- 5,000
Garo police and presents	- 3,880
Collection of duties	- 3,000
Local corps	- <u>14,400</u>
	26,280

But the yield would be far short of the expenses that would be entailed if an additional English officer were appointed. Scott, therefore suggested that the tract should be placed under the care of the Commissioner for Cooch Behar and that, that officer should be required to spend at least four months in every year in visiting the Garo frontier and making a tour throughout the whole of his jurisdiction.² Dhubri he suggested would be a very convenient tour centre, being only forty miles from Cooch Behar and as central a spot as could be found for the established haths at Chitabari, Titaria, Bengakuta, Rajballab, Singimari and Palumari at which two-thirds of the whole Garo trade was carried on.³

In consequence of the parwana several of the sardars in Mechpara attended Scott at different places. Scott left no room for compromise on and very interesting" report. They considered that the fruitfulness of his proposed measures would chiefly depend on the "character, temper and

1. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's report of 20 Aug. 1816, paras 83 and 86-87.

2. Ibid, para 97.

3. Ibid, para 99.

qualifications of the individual to whose execution they might be entrusted"¹, and what better person then to undertake the responsibility than Scott himself? But Scott could scarcely undertake this additional duty without serious interruption to his administration of civil and criminal justice as judge-magistrate of Rangpur. Their solution was to appoint another judicial officer to Rangpur, making Scott commissioner in Cooch Behar and joint magistrate of Rangpur with special charge of that part of the district eastward of the Brahmaputra, and between that river and Cooch Behar. This new charge consisted of the thanas of Dhubri, Nageswari, Goalpara and Karailbari.² The government further gave Scott the widest discretionary power to make "any such arrangements as local considerations might appear to demand".³

Scott was already on his fact-finding tour with Ensign Terranean and his detachment when in April 1817 he received his new charge and orders from government. He thereupon published a proclamation in all the villages expressing government's readiness to grant a general amnesty provided the Garos paid a fine, restored the property plundered in the raids of 1815, delivered up all their human skulls and pledged themselves to submit to the rules which government would establish with due regard to their legitimate customs.⁴

In consequence of the parwana several of the sardars in Mechpara attended Scott at different places. Scott left no room for compromise on

1. J.L.B., vol. 6, letter of 24 Oct. 1817.

2. B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 48, Bayley to Scott 27 Sept. 1816.

3. B.C.J.C. 5 April 1817, no. 18, Bayley to Scott 5 April 1817.

4. B.C.J.C. 5 April 1817, no. 16, Scott to Bayley 5 March 1817.

the conditions considering that it was essential that the Garos should plainly see that nothing would come of resistance and that the very the lands which the chiefs and their ancestors had long cultivated on 1 favourable terms offered by the government merely showed its clemency.

His plan was successful and early in March, 1817, the sardars of nine out of the twelve villages belonging to the pass of Tikri in Mechpara attended upon any lands they cultivated within the zamindaries under the Company. Scott, paid a fine of 800 rupees and agreed to the other conditions laid

down by Scott.² The articles of agreement which they signed were these: The chiefs promised never to commit violence upon the Company's subjects - or any one else - or to permit British subjects to do so, upon

pain of such punishment as the magistrate might think fit to inflict. The chiefs also promised to abandon the practice of keeping, buying or selling human heads, and, for the due performance of these

They bound themselves to apprehend and deliver to the magistrate's articles of agreement, became mutually responsible. people at Tikri any Garo belonging to that duar or pass who should be

guilty of such violence to the Company's subjects. This agreement became the model for Scott's subsequent agreements with tributary Garo chiefs of Halugan and Nibari and the independent

They promised to give early information to the police of any villages of Bokn, Okra, Sunal, Buradhi, Rangbari, Rangsigiri, Raachuplan by any Garo assembly to invade the lowlands. giri, Jamgonda, Maniupara, Khamagiri, Mansang and Dubungiri.²

They undertook to settle their disputes among themselves by arbitration, according to the ancient customs and to give up private

blood feuds. Shortly after making these engagements in April 1817 Scott and Ensign Wilton who was surveying the Garo frontier, together with many of their servants were attacked with violent fever. Ensign Wilton fell a

They agreed to grant to the wazirs, interpreters and servants of victim to the climate and Scott suffered a dangerous and protracted illness the Company, easy access at all times to their villages, and to assume responsibility for their safety. ness which interrupted the progress of his settlement of Garo affairs.³

Despite this setback the governor-general was able to report to They also undertook to take such punji advances from government the Directors, in a despatch of 24 October 1817 that Scott's first as were sanctioned by established custom and to deliver cotton at the measures had proved most successful. The Garos released from the vexatious established rate or pay the value in money.

interference of the zamindars, had been quiet and orderly. So much so,

1. B.C.J.C. 5 April 1817, no. 16, Scott to Bayley 5 March 1817.

2. Ibid. J.C. 2 May 1817, no. 26, Scott to Bayley 14 April 1817.

2. Ibid. 1817.

3. B.C.J.C. 9 Sept. 1817, no. 21, Scott to Bayley, 10 Aug. 1817; J.L.B., vol. 6, 24 Oct. 1817.

indeed, that the Company's forces had been withdrawn, and it had proved unnecessary to raise the whole of the local corps for service on the lands which the chiefs and their ancestors had long cultivated on Garo frontier which had been proposed by Scott. punji advances and settle them according to justice.

The Garos for their part agreed to pay rents, like other ryots. The improvement which Scott's activities and settlement produced are evident from the figures of crime on the Garo frontier. In 1807 upon any lands they cultivated within the zamindaries under the Company. three villages, in 1813 and 1815 two villages and in 1816 about 150 villages in the plains had been burned during Garo raids, while in every year from 1807 for which records were available there had been some loss of life, often considerable. In 1817 however there were no raids, in 1818 three persons only were killed, and in 1819 again there were no raids.²

The chiefs promised that they would go unarmed to the haths, make no pretensions to perquisites and pay the market price for what they purchased.

The chiefs also promised to abandon the practice of keeping, buying or selling human heads, and, for the due performance of these articles of agreement, became mutually responsible.¹

No less impressive was the success of the new system in bringing offenders to justice. In 1819 thirty out of thirty-one persons with tributary Garo chiefs of Halugaon and Nibari and the independent villages of Boku, Okra, Sunal, Buraduki, Rangbugri, Rangsigiri, Ramchugiri, Jamgonda, Maniupara, Khamagiri, Mansang and Dubungiri.²

Shortly after making these engagements in April 1817 Scott and Ensign Wilton who was surveying the Garo frontier, together with many of their servants were attacked with violent fever. Ensign Wilton fell a victim to the climate and Scott suffered a dangerous and protracted illness which interrupted the progress of his settlement of Garo affairs.³

Despite this setback the governor-general was able to report to

the Directors, in a despatch of 24 October 1817 that Scott's first

measures had proved most successful. The Garos released from the vexatious

interference of the zamindars, had been quiet and orderly. So much so,

1. J.L.B., vol. 6, letter of 24 Oct. 1817.
2. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 88, Scott to Bayley 27 Sept. 1819.

2. Ibid.

3. B.C.J.C. 9 Sept. 1817, no. 21, Scott to Bayley, 10 Aug. 1817;
J.L.B., vol. 6, 24 Oct. 1817.

indeed, that the Company's forces had been withdrawn, and it had proved unnecessary to raise the whole of the local corps for service on the Garo frontier which had been proposed by Scott.¹

The improvement which Scott's activities and settlement produced are evident from the figures of crime on the Garo frontier. In 1807 three villages, in 1813 and 1815 two villages and in 1816 about 150 other villages in the plains had been burned during Garo raids, while in every year from 1807 for which records were available there had been some loss of life, often considerable. In 1817 however there were no raids, in 1818 three persons only were killed, and in 1819 again there were no raids.²

No less impressive was the success of the new system in bringing offenders to justice. In 1819 thirty out of thirty-one persons concerned in dacoity were apprehended and brought to trial³, in 1820 all four concerned in the one recorded dacoity were apprehended. In all other forms of crimes of a heinous nature except burglary the policeal success was complete.⁴ Such evident success made it the easier for Scott to secure the approval of Government for his further proposals. So far all the arrangements made with the tributary Garos had been carried out by the government without any hint that legislative sanction might be required, as a purely political measure. But Scott's

1. J.L.B., vol. 6, letter of 24 Oct. 1817.

2. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 88, Scott to Bayley 27 Sept. 1819. Comparative figures of Garo raids.

3. 'Statement of robberies and crimes of a heinous nature committed in the paraganas of Habraghat, Mechpara, Kalumalupara and Karaibari in 1819'. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 95, Scott to Bayley 20 Jan. 1821.

4. Ditto. 1820, B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 97, Scott to Bayley 7 Nov. 1821.

concern was with all the Garos, including those settled within the other Company's territories and thus nominally subject to the Company's laws and regulations. It was not possible, Scott believed, to exclude all the Garos from the Company's jurisdiction and to rely upon the restored authority of the zamindars for the peace and protection of the border, though that was what the Directors had suggested in 1815.¹ On the other hand, Scott pointed out, "The Regulations are evidently inapplicable to the existing state of society amongst them, a people in general entirely ignorant of the Bengal language or any other dialect understood in our courts"². Accordingly Scott proposed the enactment of a regulation for separating from the estates ^{of} the border zamindars all lands held by the hill tribes and for the resumption to the government and eventual restoration to their former owners of all lands of which the Garos or other hill tribes might have been forcibly dispossessed by the zamindars since 1765.³ jurisdiction of the new commissioner in numerous cases of civil, criminal Scott proposed that the administration of civil and criminal justice, the collection of revenue, the superintendence of the police, and every other branch of government within the tract should be vested in a special Commissioner appointed by the governor-general-in-Council. Paragraph 24 in the Draft Regulation framed by Scott, thus read: "The authority of the Commissioner in revenue matters and in civil causes and the jurisdiction in criminal cases vested in that officer and in the court of Nizamut Adawlat by this regulation, shall extend from the

-
1. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 92, Extract from Scott's letter to Secretary Bayley 15 Aug. 1816.
 2. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 88, Scott to Bayley 27 Sept. 1819.
 3. Ibid. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 89. Scott's draft Regulation of 1819.

Burhampootar river eastward over all lands occupied by Garrows or other hill tribes formerly considered as tributary to, or dependent upon, the zumeendars of Habraghat, Mechpara, Caloomaloo para and Currybaree. The Governor-General-in-Council will, however, exercise his discretion in releasing the inhabitants of any of the above villages from the control of the British government. He will also exercise a similar discretion in extending its authority over other Garrow communities which may be at present independent ... and it shall in cases of above nature be sufficient for the separation or annexation of such territory that a proclamation be issued to that effect by order of Government in the villages thereby affected without any further special enactment for that purpose".¹

Scott's draft Regulation, containing twenty-six sections, covered precisely the extent of the existing and the proposed Regulations and the jurisdiction of the new commissioner in numerous cases on civil, criminal and police matters relating to the Garos and other hill tribes in their relations with one another and with other subjects of the new division. A distinction was made between the Garos and other hill tribes and the other subjects speaking Bengali. In the latter's case the existing Bengal Regulations were to be considered in force and the commissioner in such a case was to perform the functions then exercised by the judge and magistrate. Provisions were made for trials of the criminals among the Garos and other hill tribes and the commissioner was empowered to judge and punish either by himself directly in minor offences, or with the prior approval of the Nizam adalat in cases of

1. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 89. Scott's draft Regulation of 1819.

graver charges. On the proceedings of dealing with crimes committed by the people from the low country or by other individuals subject to the general regulations and of collecting revenue, it was to be left to the Governor-general for further orders.¹

The important thing was to bring all the Garos, whether dependent or tributary, under the direct British control, without the interposition of the zamindars. Cleveland in 1778 had attained the same object in Bhagalpur by making the country of the Mal Paharias 'a government estate holding rent-free from government direct'.² But the very much greater extent of the Garo lands, coupled with the fact that many Garos had long lived in the lowland areas under the Bengal Regulations demanded a broader plan. Scott saw that a separate administration was essential. As had happened in the case of the tribes of Chota Nagpur and Palamau³ the introduction of the 'Cornwallis system' with scant respect for tribal language and tribal custom had done little justice to the Garos of the north-east frontier of Bengal. The tribesmen, subjected to an alien judicial system, administered by men who neither spoke nor understood their language, had been driven into a hostile isolation. Scott argued that his new plan would remove this anomaly and attain the security and general welfare of the Garos and other hill tribes living in the eastern part of Rangpur on the left bank of the Brahmaputra.⁴

1. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 89, Scott's draft Regulation of 1819.

2. J.H. Hutton, op.cit., p. 418.

3. see J.C. Jha, Tribal unrest on the south-west Frontier of the Bengal Presidency 1831-1833. P. 310.

4. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 88, Scott to Bayley 27 Sept. 1819.

1. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 88, Scott to Bayley 27 Sept. 1819.

Although Scott believed that trial by the commissioner, alone or with the aid of Garo assessors, would be the most efficient mode of trial, and proposed that the new regulations should make the commissioner the supreme judicator,¹ he was conscious that more and more Garos should be employed in the police and judicial administration. In his Draft Regulation of 1819 he therefore suggested rules to that end which might be issued by the governor-general.

The rules had a double purpose, to give the Garo chiefs a share in the policing of the Garo hills, and to associate them with the judicial administration. The rules provided in the first place for the recognition of existing sardars or heads of villages, and of laskars or chiefs of the local divisions called duars, whose authority was established within their respective limits, and for the nomination of fit persons for such posts by the inhabitants of the village or the sardars of the division where none at present enjoyed such authority.

These sardars and laskars should be responsible for reporting murders and other heinous offences within their limits and for attempting the discovery and apprehension of the perpetrators thereof. They should also be made responsible for the security of the lowland territory adjoining their villages or duars and for preventing Garo inroads or outrages upon that territory, and for apprehending any Garo who should

commit such outrage. To assist them in preserving order, the mandals or village officers of all border lowland villages should be obliged to report all crimes committed by the hillmen both to the police offices and to the nearest Garo sardar, who would then, in concert with the laskars

1. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 88, Scott to Bayley 27 Sept. 1819.

judgement. All other matters of dispute, civil or criminal, which the and other sardars, seek to trace and apprehend the offenders. In return sardars and laskars were unable to settle in the manner above prescribed for these services the laskars and sardars would be allowed a salary. should be tried before panchayat either appointed by the commissioner or In case of misconduct, however, they would be removable from office by chosen by the parties. Their decision if not considered by the commissioner the commissioner.

to be obviously unjust, should immediately be carried into execution.¹
For administration of justice the draft rules provided that the By using their own chiefs in police and judicial matters Scott sardar should be empowered to take cognizance of civil disputes between hoped to make the Garos the agents in the process of their civilization. the inhabitants of his village, and the laskar of such disputes between Cleveland had employed this method in Bhagalpur, and like Cleveland Scott villages in his division. In either case the aid should be taken of a hoped also by this means to gain the hill peoples' confidence. By panchayat consisting of the principal husbandmen or persons chosen by the limiting the normal jurisdiction of the Company's darogas to the lowlands parties themselves. Where a decision had to be enforced upon one of the only, and making them work together with the sardars and laskars in parties it should be first referred to the commissioner. Petty criminal arresting serious criminals, it was intended to promote better understanding and co-operation between the Garos and the Company's servants. panchayat awarding such damages to the injured party as custom provided. But Scott's task was more difficult than Cleveland's, for in the Garo

Scott proposed that police darogas should be appointed with the hills a strong body of organised and co-operative chiefs and to some usual powers at convenient stations in the lowlands, but that they should measure to be created. To this end he proposed to arrange two annual assemblies of the Garo chiefs of each paragana where the Commissioner would entertain them at public expense, and they would render their aid in cases the daroga should observe the principle of securing the aid of the Garo sardars and laskars and of their barkandazes in apprehending the offenders.

Finally Scott proposed that when the Commissioner tried Garo cases he should be assisted by five Garo assessors. They should be consulted on all points connected with the peculiar customs and manners of the Garos, and their opinion as to the guilt or innocence of the prisoner should be recorded, though this should not bind the court in passing

1. Enclosure 2 of Scott's Draft Regulation of 1819.

2. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 30.

3. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 90, Enclosure 2 of Scott's letter of

27 Sept. 1819.

3. Ibid. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 90, Enclosure 2 of the Regulation of 1819.

judgement. All other matters of dispute, civil or criminal, which the sardars and laskars were unable to settle in the manner above prescribed should be tried before ^a panchayat either appointed by the commissioner or chosen by the parties. Their decision if not considered by the commissioner to be obviously unjust, should immediately be carried into execution.¹

By using their own chiefs in police and judicial matters Scott hoped to make the Garos the agents in the process of their ^{own} civilization. Cleveland had employed this method in Bhagalpur, and like Cleveland Scott hoped also by this means to earn the hill peoples' confidence. By limiting the normal jurisdiction of the Company's darogas to the lowlands only, and making them work together with the sardars and laskars in arresting serious criminals, it was intended to promote better understanding and co-operation between the Garos and the Company's servants. But Scott's task was more difficult than Cleveland's, for in the Garo hills a strong body of organised and co-operative chiefs had in some measure to be created. To this end he proposed to arrange two annual assemblies of the Garo chiefs of each paragana where the Commissioner would entertain them at public expense, and they would renew their fealty to the Government. At these assemblies any pending criminal cases would also be tried.² Through such regular meetings, and by such co-operation in the judicial administration it was hoped to bring into existence a powerful body of hill chiefs, loyal to the government and serving as useful subsidiary agents for the maintenance of law and order.³

1. Enclosure 2 of Scott's Draft Regulation of 1819.
B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 90.

2. B.C.J.C. 28 Dec. 1821, no. 90, Enclosure 2 of Scott's letter of 27 Sept. 1819.

3. Ibid. *The Regulations of the Government of Fort William in Bengal*, vol. 11, pp. 659-663, preamble of the Regulation X of 1822.

To these various proposals the Governor-general-in-council and the Court of Directors eventually replied with approval. In December, 1821 Scott was nominated as the first civil commissioner of the north-east parts of Rangpur. The Calcutta Council speaking of the zeal and intelligence displayed by Scott, expressed their desire to make use of his "talents and local experience". In recognition of "the responsibility and arduous nature of the functions" which their new commissioner would have to perform they allowed him a salary of 40,000 rupees a year, including all travelling and personal charges, a sum they considered to be no more than adequate.¹ This administrative action was followed in 1822 by legislation. The Regulation X of 1822 was passed on the 19 September, 1822, embodying Scott's proposals. Its preamble declared that "with a view to promote the desirable object of reclaiming these races to the habits of civilized life, it seems necessary that a special plan for the administration of justice, of a kind adapted to their peculiar customs and prejudices, should be arranged and concerted with ^{the} head men, and that measures should at the same time be taken for freeing them from dependence on the zamindars of the British provinces".² Accordingly, section II of the Regulation separated the tract of country comprised in the thanas of Goalpara, Dhubri, and Karaibari from the jurisdiction of the district of Rangpur and declared the operation of the existing Regulations to be suspended except in cases of subjects other than the Garos and other hill tribes. The new Regulation then defined the powers of the Civil Commissioner for the North-East parts of Rangpur in administering civil and

1. J.L.B., vol 8, letter of 8 Feb. 1822.

2. R. Clarke, The Regulations of the Government of Fort William in Bengal, vol. II, pp. 659-663, preamble of the Regulation X of 1822.

CHAPTER III

criminal justice, the collection of revenue, and the superintendence of THE EXTERNAL DANGER TO THE NORTH-EAST FRONTIER AND DAVID SCOTT the police. Although strictly based on Scott's draft, it did not incorporate all the rules which Scott had drafted, but it left sufficient

To the Company the strategic north-east frontier of Bengal discretion in the hands of the government to meet all cases that might arise subsequently.

security of its Bengal territories rested not only on the peaceable demeanour of the peoples of the immediate frontier hills, but also of those of the independent regions such as Cachar, Assam, Manipur and Burma beyond them. Any power which might advance along the Brahmaputra into central and eastern Bengal was a potential threat.

In the early part of the nineteenth century the Company's government felt no fear of the Ahom dynasty in Assam, for its weakness was very evident. But from 1817 the gradual rise to dominance of the Burmese in Assam demanded serious attention, for it gave a new complexion to the problem of a Burmese threat to Rangpur and Chittagong. Scott saw with alarm the Burmese encroachments upon the Chittagong frontier, and the greater danger inherent in their seizure of power in the upper Brahmaputra valley, and he concluded that the safety of the Company's north-east frontier depended on the existence of a strong and friendly power in Assam. The Ahom rulers were certainly friendly but clearly not strong enough to stand unaided against the Burmese aggressors. Therefore Scott argued, the British should intervene on their behalf, driving out the Burmese, and making the Assamese strong friendly neighbours. Scott held and expressed these views strongly. The purpose of this chapter is to show the dominant role which the opinions of this trusted frontier officer

CHAPTER III

THE EXTERNAL DANGER TO THE NORTH-EAST FRONTIER AND DAVID SCOTT

To the Company the strategic north-east frontier of Bengal meant the whole of the hill ranges surrounding the Assam valley, for the security of its Bengal territories rested not only on the peaceable demeanour of the peoples of the immediate frontier hills, but also of those of the independent regions such as Cachar, Assam, Manipur and Burma beyond them. Any power which might advance along the Brahmaputra into central and eastern Bengal was a potential threat.

In the early part of the nineteenth century the Company's government felt no fear of the Ahom dynasty in Assam, for its weakness was very evident. But from 1817 the gradual rise to dominance of the Burmese in Assam demanded serious attention, for it gave a new complexion to the problem of a Burmese threat to Rangpur and Chittagong. Scott saw with alarm the Burmese encroachments upon the Chittagong frontier, and the greater danger inherent in their seizure of power in the upper Brahmaputra valley, and he concluded that the safety of the Company's north-east frontier depended on the existence of a strong and friendly power in Assam. The Ahom rulers were certainly friendly but clearly not strong enough to stand unaided against the Burmese aggressors. Therefore Scott argued, the British should intervene on their behalf, driving out the Burmese, and making the Assamese strong friendly neighbours. Scott held and expressed these views strongly. The purpose of this chapter is to show the dominant role which the opinions of this trusted frontier officer

This open attack upon the raja's position Scott duly prevented.¹ played in the preparation of Amherst's controversial¹ Burmese war.

Scott first came into contact with the confused politics of Ahom Assam as magistrate of Rangpur. The old king Suklingpha Kamaleswar Singh died in 1811 and thereafter a struggle for power developed between members of the royal line and their hereditary prime ministers - the buragohains. In February, 1814, the young raja, Chandra Kanta wrote to the governor general, Lord Hastings, recalling the friendship extended to his family by Lord Minto, his immediate predecessor, and asking for assistance in quelling the internal dissensions within his kingdom. The raja mentioned the incursions of the Nora, Khamti, Dafla and Moamaria tribes, the plundering of parganas in Kamrup and on the Bijni boundary² by such rebels as Manik Chand, and the threat of invasion by a royal pretender, Brajanath Kunwar, aided by an adventurous English trader Robert Bruce, from the Rangpur district.³ It was with this last threat that Scott was immediately concerned, for the Supreme Government ordered him to take prompt and rigorous measures to prevent any such invasions. This was a duty, they felt, "imposed on the British government no less by its subsisting relation with that power, than by a regard for the tranquillity of its own possessions which must be endangered by the proceedings under the raja and being connected with the government of Assam merely by the consideration".⁴

1 The President of the Board of Control, C.W. Williams Wynn, was to comment on this war that Britain could not conquer the world out of 'mere humanity' just because Britons believed that only under their rule were people happy.

See G.D. Bearce, British Attitudes Towards India, 1784-1858, p.50.

2 B.P.C. 29 Apr. 1814, no. 51, The Raja of Assam to the Governor General, received on 3 Feb. 1814.

3 B.P.C. 29 Apr. 1814, no. 23, Scott to Adam, 18 Apr. 1814.

4 B.P.C. 29 Apr. 1814, no. 52, Adam to Scott, 29 Apr. 1814.

This open attack upon the raja's position Scott duly prevented.¹ But more difficult to deal with were the pleas of an envoy Badan Chandra Barphukan, through whom the raja appealed for help against the buragohain, who was alleged to be keeping the raja virtually a prisoner. The letter the envoy bore complained about the continued enmity of the buragohain, and you will accordingly be pleased to observe generally to the raja's agent in reply to his propositions that our policy is merely to attend to the concerns of our own government and not to interfere into those of other states even although the greatest advantage be offered as the price of our interference". Scott duly performed his task of politely reminding Lord Hastings that the Company had previously given help to Raja Gaurinath (1780-1795). He asked for at least six companies of sipahis to be sent to his aid, declaring his readiness in return to become a tributary ruler under British protection, and to pay a sum of one lakh and a half of Narayani rupees. He also promised a favourable settlement of custom dues for the benefit of both the British traders and his own government.²

The government, which had recognized a special relationship with the royal family in 1814, declined in 1815 to take any action on Chandra Kanta's behalf. The secretary to the governor-general wrote to Scott to say "the British government not being bound by any engagements to support the raja and being connected with the government of Assam merely by the general relation of amity and friendship, it cannot consistently with its own principles of policy comply with the Raja's solicitation while the

-
1. B.P.C. 13 May 1814, nos. 58-59. Scott to Adam 29 Apr. 1814.
 2. B.P.C. 8 Dec. 1815, no. 53, enclosure 2, Raja Chandra Kanta's letter of 28 Katrie 1822 (B.S.); B.P.C. 8 Dec. 1815, nos. 52-53 (1), Scott to Adam 15 Nov. 1815.

are evidences of Burmese own grievance against the Ahoms. See G.C. Barua, *Ahom Burani*, pp. 375-6, and J.A.S.B., Aug. 1838, p. 673 about the Burmese grievances against Purnananda Buragohain who had given support to the refractory shans or Naras.

Scott also reported the immediate action he had taken in government of Assam shall continue to maintain with us the same friendly response to the pleas of Ruchinath Buragohain and of Brajanath Kunwar relations which now exist, and while the domestic feuds of the government who had also waited on him. He had informed the Buragohain's men¹ that are not of a nature to affect the tranquillity of the Company's provindes as it was inconsistent with the principle of the British government to we are necessarily precluded from interference in its internal affairs interfere with the internal concerns of foreign nations he was fully and you will accordingly be pleased to observe generally to the raja's persuaded that no military aid would be granted to them, but that no agent in reply to his propositions that our policy is merely to attend would nevertheless submit their request to government. He also told them to the concerns of our own government and not to interfere into those that though he was not aware of any objections to Brajanath Kunwar's pro- of other states even although the greatest advantage be offered as the ceeding to Assam unaccompanied by any armed force, the latter would be price of our interference".¹ Scott duly performed his task of politely required to secure the British government's previous sanction for his refusing the agent of the raja, and there the matter ended. departure. Scott also explained to Brajanath that he could not be allowed

On 17 May, 1817, however, Scott had to report that since the British had refused to help resolve the conflicts within the Ahom kingdom, Badan Chandra had sought the aid of the Burmese, with whose help the buragohain had been expelled. What is more, though the expelled Buragohain Purnananda died soon after, his eldest son Ruchinath had taken post at Gauhati and another son had arrived at Rangpur to invite the exiled Brajanath Kunwar to ascend the throne, and to solicit British armed intervention.² Three days later, Scott, giving "more precise information on Assam", reported that the army which had entered Assam was not composed of Burmese and Cachar people but of the subjects of the rajas of Moran, Khamti and Singpho - the three independent chiefs whose territories lay between Ruchinath to invite Brajanath. Assam Buranji, p. 192.

1 B.P.C. 8 Dec. 1815, no. 54, Adam to Scott, 8 Dec. 1815.

2 B.P.C. 24 May 1817, no. 32, Scott to Adam, 17 May 1817.

3 B.P.C. 31 May 1817, nos. 91-92, Scott to Adam, 20 May 1817.

* As will be seen Scott's earlier information was more correct for it was the Burmese, assisted by these people who invaded Assam. There are evidences of Burmese own grievance against the Ahoms. See G.C. Barua, Ahom Buranji, pp. 375-6, and J.A.S.B., Aug. 1838, p. 673 about the Burmese grievances against Purnananda Buragohain who had given support to the refractory shans or Naras.

Singphos Scott also reported the immediate action he had taken in response to the pleas of Ruchinath Buragohain and of Brajanath Kunwar who had also waited on him. He had informed the Buragohain's men¹ that as it was inconsistent with the principle of the British government to interfere with the internal concerns of foreign nations he was fully persuaded that no military aid would be granted to them, but that he would nevertheless submit their request to government. He also told them that though he was not aware of any objections to Brajanath Kunwar's proceeding to Assam unaccompanied by any armed force, the latter would be required to secure the British government's previous sanction for his departure. Scott also explained to Brajanath that he could not be allowed to take any military force with him and that in the event of his again being compelled to take refuge in British territory, government would not then sanction the renewal of his pension. But Brajanath decided to leave Assam on any terms.² Following Ruchinath Buragohain's plan, Brajanath, with his son, arrived safely at Jorhat. There was no opposition worth the name, and Raja Chandra Kanta fled to Rangpore.* Though unfortunately, Brajanath could not be enthroned as he had a scar on his body, which was a disqualification for the raj according to Ahom custom, his son Purandar Singh was accepted by people as King of Assam early in 1818.³ All this time Scott remained under the impression that it was the

1. Among others Jagannath Dhekial Phukan was sent to Chitmarī by Ruchinath to invite Brajanath.

G. Borooah, Assam Buranji, p. 192.

2. B.P.C. 31 May 1817, nos. 91-92, Scott to Adam, 20 May 1817.

* This Rangpore is in Upper Assam and from here onwards this spelling will be used to distinguish it from Rangpur district in Bengal.

3. G. Borooah, op.cit., pp. 192-3.

6. B.C., vol. 770/20904, p. 14; P.B.B. 12 Sept. 1823, para 94.

B.P.C. 29 July 1820, Governor General's letter to Raja Chandra Kanta, 20 July 1820.

Singphos, Khamtis and Moamarias and not the Burmese who had invaded Assam in answer to Barphukan's call for help.

In 1819 the young buragohain and Raja Purandar Singh were driven from Gauhati by the faction headed by Chandra Kanta, supported by the Burmese. In September both of them addressed letters to Government from their refuge at Chilmari, in the district of Rangpur, asking for British help.¹ By this time the Burmese had received from Raja Chandra Kanta an acknowledgement of his vassal status and many thousand of Assamese had fled to British territory. The question of interfering in Assam politics was thus again raised.² Scott forwarded petitions from Purandar Singh³, offering to become a tributary of the Company in return for their aid, and from Ruchinath⁴, claimant to the post of buragohain. He also forwarded a counter claim from Raja Chandra Kanta for the surrender of the two pretenders⁵. To this last, answer was made by Swinton in 1820 that while they remained peaceable refugees the British government would continue to offer them asylum⁶. It was not quite so easy to deal with the Buragohain's petition, which had also explained the power and position of the Assamese prime minister vis-a-vis the raja, for the Supreme Government felt uncertain about the Buragohain's true authority. "We should remark" they told the Court of Directors, "that there is some confusion and obscurity in the petition presented by the Bura Goheyn, he

1. B.C., vol. 770/20904, pp. 9-11; H.H. Wilson, Documents illustrative of the Burmese War, p. 6, Document no. 8.
2. B.P.C. 29 July 1820, no. 79, Scott to Swinton, 4 Sept. 1819.
3. B.P.C. 29 July 1820, no. 80, Scott to Swinton, 1 Nov. 1819.
4. B.P.C. 29 July 1820, nos. 81-82, Scott to Swinton, 27 Dec. 1819.
5. B.P.C. 29 July 1820, nos. 90 & 94, Raja Chandra Kanta's letters received on 8 Nov. 1819 and 14 June 1820.
6. B.C., vol. 770/20904, p. 14; P.L.B. 12 Sept. 1823, para 94, B.P.C. 29 July 1820, Governor General's letter to Raja Chandra Kanta, 20 July 1820.

not more than one thousand Burmese in Assam¹, and that Raja Chandra Kanta sometimes represented himself as the adherent and supporter of Poorander Singh, and at other times seems to state the supreme authority as resting in his own person, owing to the default of legal heirs to the Raj".¹ Nevertheless the government made it clear to the fugitives that it was not its policy to interfere in the internal affairs of a foreign state, nor to pronounce on disputed titles to the musnad, but rather to maintain friendly relations with whoever was the reigning prince.²

The reply was a restatement of the position earlier taken up by Barlow and by the Court of Directors in relation to the affairs of Rajputana and Central India.³ That position had proved untenable in the face of Pindari inroads, and the hopes of a self-contained peace false. Under Lord Hastings extensive campaigns had been necessary before the Pindaris were crushed, the Marathas humbled and the peshwaship abolished, and all the important chiefs of India made to enter into treaty relations with the Company. The hope that the Company could remain aloof and indifferent to events in Assam soon proved equally misplaced. 1821 saw a further complication of the affairs of Ahom Assam and the raising of wider policy issues by Scott. In February, Scott reported that there were

1 H.H. Wilson, op.cit., p. 6, Document no. 8.

2 Ibid.

3 Barlow rejected the appeals of the Rajput ruler of Jaipur for protection against the Pindaris and Marathas, declaring his determination to observe the principle of non-interference in the internal concerns of the Indian states and in their transactions with each other. The British government's attention would henceforth be limited to the internal prosperity of the Company's territory. (B.S.P.C. 13 Feb. 1806 no. 67. Barlow to Rajah of Jaipur, 3 Feb. 1816) Against this General Lake - in Scott's role - argued that to abandon the Rajput states would "probably terminate in a renewal of hostilities under circumstances of the most serious disadvantage". (B.S.P.C. 6 Feb. 1806, no. 15, Lake to Barlow 17 Jan. 1806) In the event Lake's predictions proved correct. - This reference is gratefully received from Mr. B.N. Ghosh who has been working on British Relations with the Pathans and Pindaris for a London University doctoral thesis.

not more than one thousand Burmese in Assam¹, and that Raja Chandra Kanta emboldened by their slackness, was planning to throw off their yoke with the aid of Ahom refugees in the Company's territory.² He had also to report preparations by the ex-*raja* Purandar Singh for an attack from Bhutan upon Assam.³ In May, the Burmese declared Raja Chandra Kanta deposed for his connivance at the murder of their supporter Badan Chandra Barphukan.⁴ The Burmese installed another Ahom prince, Jogeswar Singh in Chandra Kanta's place, who was a mere puppet in their hands.⁵ The Calcutta Council, whose earlier non-interference policy had been approved by the Court of Directors⁶, now began to feel that "continued refusal to interfere in the affairs of Assam has by no means prevented the troubles and discontented state of that country from proving a source of embarrassment to the British government". The government of Ava had taken advantage of the dissensions prevailing in the Assamese territory to occupy the country, so that Burmese forces had come into contact with British territories at another and most inconvenient point.⁷ Scott took advantage of these doubts to press again for intervention. In his letter of 19 May he argued that the arrogant character of the Burmese, and their government's spirit of conquest must make their advance into Assam dangerous. He therefore asked "whether the interests of the British government would not be best consulted by permitting the Assam refugees to obtain the necessary means for the expulsion of the invaders".⁸ Scott offered two arguments for such a course : an Assamese

-
- 1 B.P.C. 19 March 1821, no. 111, Scott to Swinton, 6 Feb. 1821.
 - 2 B.P.C. 19 March 1821, no. 112, Scott to Swinton, 6 Feb. 1821.
 - 3 B.C. vol. 770/20904, pp. 19-20.
 - 4 H.H. Wilson, op.cit., p. 7, Document no. 8.
 - 5 B.C. vol. 770/20904, p. 21.
 - 6 Ibid, pp. 7-8.
 - 7 Ibid.
 - 8 B.P.C. 16 June 1821, no. 69, Scott to Swinton, 19 May 1821.

rising against the Burmese was inevitable; and if, for lack of support it failed, ^{and} consolidation of Burmese authority in Assam went on unhampered, the Company would be driven to station a considerable force on the unhealthy eastern frontier.¹ He added, that the cruelties practised by the Burmese, and the devastation of property had made the whole people desirous of being relieved from them, and that all that seemed necessary to enable either Purandar Singh or the Buragohain to establish their authority, was a supply of firearms².

The Calcutta authorities did furnish the Buragohain with a rahdari pass for two hundred armed men and permitted him to purchase arms privately. But they did so without in any way accepting Scott's analysis of the situation. Since no effective authority existed in Assam, such limited assistance could not be construed, they felt, as a hostile move against a neighbouring power³, and they were careful to prevent any appearance of countenancing the Buragohain's attempt. But although the assistance rendered was meagre, Scott helped the fugitives to make full use of it. He issued instructions to Lieutenant Magowan of the Rangpur Local Battalion that the transport of arms, ammunitions, and other military stores to Assam be permitted, and that natives of Assam should be at liberty to return to their country with arms either singly or in a body. He also allowed Hindustani soldiers to go to Assam provided they went singly.⁴

1. B.P.C. 16 June 1821, no. 69, Scott to Swinton, 19 May 1821.

2. Ibid; Wilson, op.cit., p. 7, Document no. 8; B.C., vol. 770/20904, pp. 22-23.

3. B.P.C. 16 June 1821, no. 71, Prinsep to Scott, 9 June 1821.

4. B.P.C. 26 January 1822, no. 77, Scott to Lt. Magowan, 19 Dec. 1821, and to Prinsep 23 Dec. 1821.

For all the favour shown, Purandar Singh's bid failed, his troops being defeated by Chandra Kanta, his rival for the throne, to whom Robert Bruce thereupon transferred his services. At the end of October 1821 it was Chandra Kanta's turn to apply for British assistance, through Robert Bruce. On Scott's advice the government issued orders to the Territorial Department to give effect to any pass that Scott might issue and to grant permission for the transport of military stores to Assam should application be made at the Presidency.¹ Scott believing Chandra Kanta's position to be favourable after Purandar's defeat² and in the absence of any large force of Burmese, gave permission to Bruce to purchase three hundred muskets and ninety maunds of gunpowder for Chandra Kanta.³ It is to be noted that although at the time the Company's relations with Burma were strained they were not declaredly hostile. The Supreme Government by giving a free hand to Scott had allowed itself, however reluctantly, to be driven into conflict with the Burmese; "one of those unjustifiable and improper proceedings", its critic declared, "which the legislature in their enactment wisely and judiciously meant to prohibit..."⁴

Chandra Kanta's success in defeating Purandar and capturing all Davidson and Scott were careful therefore not to allow Ahom refugees to the districts bordering upon the Company's territories led the enthusiastic Scott to abandon Purandar Singh and the Buragohain.⁵ But such square

1. B.P.C. 8 Dec. 1821, nos. 81-82, Scott to Swinton, 3 Nov. 1821 and Swinton to Scott, 30 Nov. 1821; H.H. Wilson, op.cit., p.8, Document no. 8.
2. B.P.C. 8 Dec. 1821, no. 81, Scott to Swinton, 3 Nov. 1821.
3. Ibid.
4. Captain W. White, A political history of the Extraordinary Events which led to the Burmese War, p. 118.
5. B.C., vol. 770/20904, p. 24.

success also drove the Burmese government to send the greatest of its generals¹, Mingi Maha Bandula, to Assam with a large force in the month of April 1822.² At Mahgarh, near Jorhat, a battle took place in which Chandra Kanta, after fighting gallantly for a long time, succumbed to the superior force of Bandula.³ On 30 September Scott reported that Chandra Kanta had been expelled from Assam by the Burmese party, and had fled to the chowky opposite Goalpara.⁴

Chandra Kanta's defeat marked the extinction of Ahom authority in Assam, for towards the end of June 1822, Mingi Maha Tuwa, the commanding officer of the Burmese army at the Assam chowky, was declared Raja of Assam. Scott wrote to the Supreme Government at Calcutta; "the Burmese having obtained complete mastery of Assam and a person of that nation having been appointed to the supreme authority, the country may now be considered as a province of the Burman empire."⁵

Though in June 1822 Scott and Lt. Davidson, who commanded at Goalpara, reported the Burmese peaceable, they found ample cause to fear their forces.⁶ Davidson from his own experience knew the effectiveness of their swift warboats each carrying anything up to 150 armed men. Davidson and Scott were careful therefore not to allow Ahom refugees to

-
1. He is still a great hero in Burma, and when sovereignty was transferred to the Burmese by the Labour Government in 1948, the big square in the centre of Rangoon was renamed after him. D. Woodman, The Making of Burma, p. 70.
 2. B.P.C. 6 July 1822, no.49, Scott to Swinton, 10 July 1822; also in Scotts's Historical Notes, B.S.P.C., 14 July 1826.
 3. B.C., vol. 770/20904, p. 25.
 4. H.H. Wilson, op.cit., p. 8, Document no. 8.
 5. B.P.C. 26 July 1822, no. 50, Scott to Prinsep, 11 July 1822.
 6. B.C., vol. 770/20904, p. 41. Reports of various outrages, committed on the British frontier villages by the Burmese troops had been received by Scott. H.H. Wilson, op.cit., p.8, Document no. 8.

provoke the Burmese, and Scott urged the despatch to the frontier of considerable reinforcements.¹ In July Scott heard from a Burmese wakil that two months earlier the Burmese commander Mingi Maha Tilwa had contemplated a full scale attack upon the Goalpara district with an army of 20,000 men², and Scott in a private letter addressed to George Swinton, political secretary to the government, reported the danger threatening the eastern frontier of Bengal. "Government will now begin to feel", Scott wrote, "the inconvenience of the line of conduct imposed upon them by the Act of Parliament³, and will have to keep a much larger force in this quarter than would have sufficed in 1816".⁴ He then stressed the gravity of the Burmese menace by pointing out that the whole of Dacca, Mymensing, Rangpur, and Natore districts now lay at the mercy of the Burmese. They now commanded the river routes into eastern Bengal and it would be as difficult to fight with them on water as it was to fight against the Pindaris on land in South India. Their occupation of the Brahmaputra valley had changed the whole complexion of the Burmese problem. It would be a special command of a lieutenant-colonel assisted by a brigade-major. The great miscalculation, Scott thought, to judge the capacities of the Burmese in control of the Brahmaputra simply by the slow movements of their troops which included the frontier districts of Rangpur, Dacca, Sylhet and in the mountainous tract bordering on Chittagong and Tipperah. From the Tipperah. The particular threat from the Burmese war boats was also Brahmaputra valley they could easily sail down and sack Dacca and the

1 B.C. vol. 770/20904, p. 41. Reports of various outrages, committed on the British frontier villages by the Burmese troops had been received by Scott. H.H. Wilson, op.cit., p. 8, Document no. 8.

2 B.C. vol. 770/20904, p. 45.

3 Meaning the Charter Act of 1793; which laid down that the pursuit of schemes of conquest and extension of dominion in India were repugnant to the wish, honour and policy of British nation.

4 B.P.C. 26 July 1822, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 10 July 1822.

adjoining districts, and against such a naval attack the superior discipline of the British troops would not be of much use.¹

Despite the government's plain statement in 1820 that it was not concerned with the internal politics of Assam, and despite the falsification of his hopes first of Purandar Singh and then of Chandra Kanta, Scott continued to develop and press for a forward policy in Assam. He pointed out that the Burmese had laid claim to Dacca and that in 1793 Captain Cox had represented to the Burmese government that Assam was a tributary of the British government. "It does not require much insight into Asiatic politics", he said, "to enable me to predict that they [the Burmese] will not neglect the first opportunity of asserting their claims under the encouragement of being allowed quietly to possess themselves of a country that we not long ago declared to be a dependency of ours".²

Scott's forceful advocacy did induce the government to adopt various precautionary measures. The whole frontier was placed under the special command of a lieutenant-colonel assisted by a brigade-major. The river Tista was considered to be the western boundary of his command, which included the frontier districts of Rangpur, Dacca, Sylhet and Tipperah. The particular threat from the Burmese war boats was also tackled by the despatch of oared boats of the longest size, armed with a twelve-pounder carronade in the bows and a party of five golandazes (matchlockmen) per boat. Later, Lord Hastings reporting to London on the Burmese conquest of Assam, said that there was not the remotest danger

1. B.P.C. 26 July 1822, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 10 July 1822.

2. Ibid. 27 Sept. 1822, no. 69, Swinton to Scott, 27 Sept. 1822.

4. B.P.C. 27 Sept. 1822, no. 65, Swinton to Scott, 27 Sept. 1822.

were disputed. He also announced precautionary troop movements to of a rupture with the Burmese. Only because the accumulation of disorderly Rangpur, Sylhet and Dacca.

This letter of Swinton's crossed with one of Scott's, also of parties had it been thought necessary to reinforce that frontier.¹

31 Oct. 1823, in which he pressed for action. Though he was sure the

Yet it is clear that the addition of six hundred miles to the Burmese in Assam had no intention of committing any hostile act there, Anglo-Burmese border did increase the danger of conflict and the strategic importance of the Bengali frontier regions. By the end of August, 1822, Scott was able to point to one clear case of Burmese aggression - the occupation of an island in the Brahmaputra near Goalpara which had been in British hands. He made this the occasion to stress the impolicy of submitting to such Burmese provocation, the more so as Burmese reinforcements were known to be moving up.² But the Government rather pooh-poohed Scott's report about the island incident and he was gently reproved for being so bellicose and alarmist about "points of no importance, where expense may be entailed without possibility of advantage".³ The report was softened by giving to Scott the charge of direct relations with Sikkim, in addition to his other duties, on the death of the previous superintendent Major Latter.⁴ However by the autumn of 1823 Scott's warnings about Burmese intentions and his proposals for active measures came to seem more reasonable. In October Swinton told Scott of Burmese attacks upon an island in the Naf river (in the Chittagong district) and their threats to commence a general invasion if their possession of it

1 Home Misc., vol. 673, pp. 659-60, extract from a letter of Marques of Hastings dated Calcutta, 27 July 1822.

2 B.P.C. 27 Sept. 1822, no. 68, Davidson to Scott, 25 Aug. 1822.

3 B.P.C. 27 Sept. 1822, no. 69, Swinton to Scott, 27 Sept. 1822.

4 B.P.C. 27 Sept. 1822, no. 65, Swinton to Scott, 27 Sept. 1822.

upon what should be done after the Burmese had been evicted, peacefully or otherwise, from Assam. Scott assumed that native ruler whoever might Rangpur, Sylhet and Dacca.¹

This letter of Swinton's crossed with one of Scott's, also of 31 Oct. 1823, in which he pressed for action. Though he was sure the Burmese in Assam had no intention of committing any hostile act there, he saw in the Chittagong dispute an occasion for settling the problem of security along the whole eastern frontier. Any rupture with Ava over the Naf river island should be followed by the march of a Company's force into Assam "when there is not a doubt that the inhabitants of the country would rise in all directions upon the Burmese, who do not at present exceed 1000 men, and cut them off in detail"². In a private letter to Swinton, Scott put it, "the best and cheapest defence of this frontier would be the invasion of Assam"³. Even if the existing differences⁴ with the Burmese Court were adjusted by negotiations, the evacuation of Assam by the Burmese "should be insisted upon as a sine qua non - were it even at the expense of our paying to them the annual tribute they at present derive from that country, and which does not probably exceed a lack of rupees"⁵. Should force be needed to evict the Burmese from Assam Scott thought that eight to nine hundred infantry, two risalas of irregular cavalry, six field pieces, and a few battering guns "in case of accidents" would suffice. Of no less interest were Scott's comments

1. B.S.P.C. 31 Oct. 1823, no. 15. Swinton to Scott, 31 Oct. 1823.

2. B.S.P.C. 14 Nov. 1823, no. 13. Scott to Swinton, 31 Oct. 1823.

3. B.S.P.C. 14 Nov. 1823, no. 16. Scott to Swinton, 31 Oct. 1823.

4. The Sahapuri and other incidents on the Chittagong border.

5. B.S.P.C. 14 Nov. 1823, no. 16. Scott's private letter to Swinton, 31 Oct. 1823.

upon what should be done after the Burmese had been evicted, peacefully or otherwise, from Assam. Scott assumed that native ruler whoever might seem to have the best claim to be raja would be installed. But he did not believe that a satisfactory administration would emerge without British tutelage. "The imbecility, rapacity and barbarous cruelty of the Assam native administration having always been remarkable even amongst Asiatic states", he held out little hope "that such rulers should improve in the art of governing when relieved from the risk of ... rebellion or foreign invasion." He therefore urged the need to provide such a ruler with a subsidiary force, or with officers to discipline the native Assamese forces. He also pressed that the Company should insist upon a rigid observance of the commercial treaty of 1793, "owing to the infringement of which a great loss is sustained to the British merchants and also by the government in a diminished demand for Bengal salt occasioned by the exorbitant price to which it is now raised."¹ Finally Scott urged, with passion, that the Company should, from the first avow its right to interfere in the internal administration of the country.²

Scott, in a most interesting passage, attacked the wisdom of past treaties of subsidiary alliance under which such interference had been excluded. "Policy and justice alike require an open and previously understood departure from the principle that has hitherto formed the basis of our tributary alliances, viz. that we shall not interfere in the internal administration of the dependent prince. This principle of the international law of the European states appears to be founded upon a consideration of the nature of the Feudal and Representative Governments

1. B.S.P.C. 14 Nov. 1823, no. 16. Scott to Swinton, 31 Oct. 1823.

2. Ibid.

of that portion of the globe, which sufficiently provided against any gross mismanagement on the part of the dependent Ally and rendered unnecessary the interference of the Protecting state". But in India, where the Company was dealing with despotic governments - and Assam was a very bad example - "the impracticality of reconciling the actual observance of this system with the plainest dictates of justice and humanity, has repeatedly forced the British government to acts of at least a questionable colour." Better, then, Scott argued, establish the right to interfere.¹

Scott's arguments might not have carried much weight with Calcutta had not events in Cachar and Manipur increased the tension. These two petty states had known no peace for years. Manipur had been forced to acknowledge Burmese suzerainty in 1812. Cachar, under a succession of weak rulers had become an easy prey to invasions from Manipur and Jayantia. In the early years of the century the rulers of Manipur had fled to Cachar whenever they were seriously threatened by the Burmese², and in 1823 the legitimate ruler of Cachar Gobind Chandra was expelled by Manipuri adventurers. Gobind Chandra had thereupon appealed to the Burmese for help. Meanwhile, on 14 January 1824, Scott hearing of a continuing Burmese advance had ordered Major Cooper to advance up river towards Goalpara, and had himself set off for Sylhet³. By the 19th Scott was reporting a first clash with Burmese forces, at Biktampur, in which the

In November 1823 a Burmese force began concentrating at Gauhati, and Scott, fearing they were destined for an advance into Cachar, warned the Burmese on 24 November that an alliance existed between the English and Cachar³. On 28 November Amherst gave Scott authority to move troops

-
1. B.S.P.C. 14 Nov. 1823, no. 16. Scott's private letter to Swinton, 31 Oct. 1823.
 2. See J.M. Roy, The History of Manipur, pp. 63-68.
 3. B.S.P.C. 12 Dec. 1823, no. 3. Scott to Burmese officer commanding, 24 Nov. 1823.

from Sylhet into Cachar if his warning went unheeded¹. On 1 December Scott repeated his warning in the governor-general's name². On 15 December news was sent by Bruce at Gauhati of three thousand Burmese troops having advanced.³

Scott, forwarding this news to Calcutta, outlined the political or military measures which he thought might be taken. His first proposal was for a military advance up river towards Assam to compel the Burmese to abandon their movement into Cachar. His second was for an alliance with the ruler of Jaintia. His third was for a joint Anglo-Burmese guarantee of the independence of Gobind Chandra, as ruler of Cachar⁴. To this news government reacted first by expressing some doubt as to the reality of the reported move on Cachar or at least as to its seriousness, and then by giving a reluctant permission to take the proposed military measures, but only if matters came to extremities. The proposal for a joint guarantee of Gobind Chandra was disallowed since it would give to the Burmese that very right to interfere in Cachar which it was wished to prevent⁵.

Meanwhile, on 14 January 1824, Scott hearing of a continuing Burmese advance had ordered Major Cooper to advance up river towards Goalpara, and had himself set off for Sylhet⁶. By the 19th Scott was reporting a first clash with Burmese forces⁷, at Bikrampur, in which the

1. B.S.P.C. 28 Nov. 1823, no. 6, Swinton to Scott, 28 Nov. 1823.
2. B.S.P.C. 2nd Jan. 1824, no. 14, Scott to Swinton, 15 Dec. 1823.
3. B.S.P.C. 9 Jan. 1824, no. 1, Scott to Swinton, 19 Dec. 1823.
4. Ibid. 13 Feb. 1824, no. 9, Scott to Burmese commander, 2 Feb. 1824.
5. B.S.P.C. 17 Jan. 1824, no. 6, Swinton to Scott, 17 Jan. 1824.
6. B.S.P.C. 30 Jan. 1824, no. 17, Scott to Swinton, 14 Jan. 1824.
7. B.S.P.C. 30 Jan. 1824, nos. 8-9, Scott to Swinton, 19 Jan. 1824.

Company's troops had won the day. Scott sought to press the advantage, diplomatic as well as military, by advancing into Assam, but though Scott was authorised to expell the Burmese from Cachar whilst the season was still favourable, he was told not to commit the Company to an attack on Assam¹. On 22 January, after moving from Sylhet to Badapur, Scott opened communications with the Burmese commander, requesting him to withdraw from Cachar². On the 23rd he wrote to the Burmese commander requesting him to withdraw from Cachar³. On the 25th he privately wrote to Swinton for the reinforcements he obviously hoped would have to be used. His mind was also actively considering the advantages of seizing the southern bank of the Brahmaputra as far as Gauhati, and of constructing a road thence to link up with Sylhet⁴. On 1st February he received the Burmese commander's reply, declaring that his orders were to pursue the Manipurians into English territory if they were not surrendered⁵. On the 2nd Scott warned them against any advance, and threatened action against Assam should they move. Meanwhile, having warned the Burmese that Jaintia was under British protection⁶, Scott was busy threatening the raja of that territory to prevent his submitting to them⁷.

1. B.S.P.C. 30 Jan. 1824, nos. 13-14, Scott's private letter to Swinton, 20 Jan. 1824 and Swinton's reply, 27 Jan. 1824.
2. B.S.P.C. 6 Feb. 1824, no. 6, Scott to Swinton, 25 Jan. 1824.
3. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb. 1824, no. 9, Scott to Burmese commander, 23 Jan. 1824.
4. B.S.P.C. 6 Feb. 1824, no. 6, Scott to Swinton, 25 Jan. 1824.
5. B.S.P.C. Translation of a letter from the Burmese chief commanding Mingi Maha Nanda Kroden. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb. 1824, no. 7.
6. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb. 1824, no. 9, Scott to Burmese commander, 2 Feb. 1824.
7. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb. 1824, no. 8, Scott to Swinton, 3 Feb. 1824.
The Burmese claimed to have inherited suzerainty over Jaintia from the Assam ruler.

1. B.S.P.C. 20 Feb. 1824, no. 7, Scott to Swinton, 10 Feb. 1824.

2. B.S.P.C. 14 Nov. 1823, no. 17, Swinton to Scott, 17 Nov. 1823.

3. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb. 1824, no. 17, Swinton to Scott, 13 Feb. 1824.

last bold On the 6th February Scott wrote another long and detailed analysis of the danger threatening Bengal while the Burmese were allowed to hold Assam. Calling upon the experience of Symes' embassy to Ava* he painted a vivid and alarming picture of Burmese war boats speeding to the plunder of monsoon innundated Bengali villages. Against such enemies no defence was possible - except their expulsion from their base in Assam¹. By the 10th Amherst and his council were so far convinced of the inevitability of war that they wrote to Bombay and Madras asking for their military support². On that day Scott asked for permission to set in motion the advance from Goalpara³.

After rejecting all Assamese appeals for aid in 1820 they had ^{the British government} come by stages first to permit unofficial countenance of arms running and invasion, then to a more positive belief in the need to encourage the Assamese to expel the Burmese invaders and the Cacharis to stand against them⁴, and finally to accept Scott's arguments for an advance into Lower Assam. Swinton in November 1823 reported that government had admitted that a British advance to Gauhati and the occupation of the valley between Gauhati and Goalpara was necessary "even as a measure of defensive policy"⁵. Scott in his letter to the Burmese commander in Cachar could at

*. Bodawpayna's conquests had created a frontier situation necessitating British political intercourse with Burma and Captain Michael Symes was the first of the three envoys who were sent to Ava in the eighteenth century. Symes visited Ava both in 1795 and in 1802 (Cambridge History of India, vol. V, p. 559). In his An account of an embassy to the Kingdom of Ava in the year 1795 Symes gives a vivid picture of the well-equipped Burmese war boats and their "extremely impetuous" attack. He says: "By far the most respectable part of the Birman military force is their establishment of war-boats." see Lt.-Col Michael Symes, op.cit., vol.II, pp. 58-60.

1. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb.1824, no.16, Scott to Swinton, 6 Feb.1824.
2. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb.1824, nos.1,2,3. Council's letter to Presidencies, 10 Feb.1824.
3. B.S.P.C. 20 Feb.1824, no. 7, Scott to Swinton, 10 Feb. 1824.
4. B.S.P.C. 14 Nov. 1823, no.17, Swinton to Scott, 17 Nov. 1823.
5. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb.1824, no.17, Swinton to Scott, 13 Feb. 1824.

last boldly say: "Hitherto you have experienced the advantage of being at peace with us, now, if you insist upon war you will also taste its bitter fruits"¹.

On 20 February 1824, a resolution of the governor-general-in-council, reviewing Burmese actions in Arakan, Cachar and Assam declared that they "must be regarded as having placed the two countries in a state of actual war". They further resolved "that the force assembled at Gowalpara be ordered to advance upon Gauhati ... to expel the enemy from the commanding position which they occupy^{at} the upper part of the Brahmaputra". They had at last been convinced by Scott that only thus could Bengal be safeguarded². On 5 March war was publicly declared and on the 13th the British forces moved forward from their camp at Goalpara under the command of Lt.-Col. George MacMorrine³.

Scott played a great part in planning and carrying out the military operations during the Burmese war. Even after war had been declared and the troops set in motion, it was the civilian Scott who guided the advance of the force, supplying information regarding the state of roads, the possibility of obtaining supplies, and the attitude of the local people of the country.⁴

1. H.H. Wilson, op.cit., Document no. 22 (d) The subsequent military

2. B.S.P.C. 20 Feb. 1824, no. 13. Resolution of the Governor-General-in-Council, 20 Feb. 1824; B.S.P.C. 20 Feb. 1824, no. 15, Swinton to Scott 20 Feb. 1824; H.H. Wilson, op.cit., pp.28-33, Documents nos.28-29.

3. H.H. Wilson: - Historical sketch of the Burmese war, p. 18.

4. Lt. Col. J. MacMorrine was in regular correspondence with Scott. "I feel extremely obliged" he wrote, "by your kind and free communications and suggestions on the subject which your knowledge of the country and people renders you of course more capable of forming a correct judgement on the means to be employed than what I can possibly devise ...". MacMorrine to Scott, 10 Feb. 1824, B.S.P.C. 12 March 1824, no. 17; Home Misc., vol. 662, pp. 434-9.

In all his despatches about the Burmese in Assam Scott had shown himself keenly aware of the strength and weaknesses of the Company's defences, and particularly concerned about the Burmese naval threat to Eastern Bengal. Scott had visualised three possible Burmese invasion routes: the first from Manipur by Tipperah and Cachar; the second by Cachar and Jaintia and the third from Assam by the Brahmaputra¹. From the first route he expected little danger, since it ran through jungle almost impenetrable at any season of the year, and with the minimum of British military support could be defended by the inhabitants of Tipperah. The second and the third routes needed immediate attention. To the military commander Lt. Col. MacMoline he wrote of the third route, down the Brahmaputra, "I must confess that after mature reflection on this subject during the course of several years I am unable to devise any effectual and readily practicable means of meeting it other than that of expelling the Burmese from the upper part of the river"². That was because the Burmese war canoes with a speed of 8-10 miles an hour, once they had broken through the Company's flotilla at Goalpara could never be caught by British gunboats with a speed of only 4 to 5 miles an hour.³ When in February the Government ordered an advance from Goalpara up the Assam valley they were putting into practice the measure so often urged by Scott to meet the greatest Burmese threat. The subsequent military operations, as Scott had foreseen, put paid to any possible Burmese thrust down the Brahmaputra.

1. B.S.P.C. 13 Feb. 1824, no. 16, Scott to MacMoline, 6 Feb. 1824.

2. Ibid.

3. Ibid.

But Scott, while assisting the successful military advance up the Brahmaputra did not cease to try to ward off the other danger he had foreseen - that of a Burmese advance through Cachar and Jaintia. Here his chosen method was diplomatic. On 6 March he concluded a treaty with Raja Gobind Chandra of Cachar, by which the latter placed Cachar under British protection.¹ On the 10th he secured a similar treaty with Raja Ram Singh of Jaintia, the raja promising to give his military support to the Company by advancing to attack the Burmese east of Gauhati.² On the 20th Scott agreed with Raja Gambhir Singh of Manipur to supply him with arms for the recovery of Manipur from the Burmese.³ On the 21st and 24th Scott made arrangements with raja of Khyrim and Sulang, one of the rulers of the Khasi hills, for the passage of Scott and his troops through the hills to Gauhati, the raja opening a dak route and improving the road in return for a small jagir.⁴ To all these efforts to secure the eastern flank of Bengal and Sylhet - efforts made in the midst of active military preparations - the governor-general-in-council accorded a gratified approval.⁵ Scott also sought to use Assamese dislike of the Burmese. He had assured the government of the likelihood of Assamese support and received sanction for appeals to them to rise.⁶ He had hopes also of

1 Treaty with Cachar made by David Scott on 6 March 1824.

B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 7.

2 Treaty with Jaintia. B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, nos. 8-9.

3 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 22, Scott to Swinton, 20 March 1824.

4 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, nos. 10 and 16, Scott's private letter to Swinton of 21 March 1824 and of 24 March 1824.

5 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 13, Swinton to Scott, 2 Apr. 1824.

6 In a proclamation to the Assamese soon after the British troops entered the territory of Assam Scott recounted the miserable condition of the local inhabitants under the Burmese rule of terror and sought to incite the Assamese to wreak vengeance on the remnant of those who had caused them so many calamities, by helping the British army.

Home Misc., vol. 662, pp. 169-175.

securing the services of other tribes such as the Singphos and Khamtis.

Col. MacMoline on 13 March led his troops from Goalpara towards Gauhati along both banks of the Brahmaputra. At this time Scott's early presence in Assam had been declared an 'object of the highest importance' for the government.¹ Scott therefore prepared to leave Sylhet for the Assam valley.² His flank-march with an escort of three companies of the 23rd Native Infantry over the Jaintia hills formed Scott's chief contribution to the campaign.³ He secured co-operation in this march of the raja of Jaintia and his brother-in-law Esang Kunwar⁴, and was much assisted by Durgaram Khound, a one-time Khargharia Phukan (one in charge of magazine), whose local knowledge of the Nowgong area was to prove invaluable and who later showed great courage when employed by the intelligence department.⁵ By 14 April Scott had reached Raha chowki and he thereupon set off for Kaliabar, hoping to link up with Colonel MacMoline's force and prevent any return of the Burmese who had withdrawn when the raja of Jaintia's forces advanced.⁶ On 15 April he arrived at Nowgong, seventy-five miles up river from Gauhati.

Nowgong was then one of the largest towns in Assam, extending for some seven miles along both banks of the Kalang river, and containing

1 B.S.P.C. 12 March 1824, no. 23, Swinton to Scott, 12 March 1824.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1824, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 1 A

3 E.B. Shaw, The First Burmese War and the British Conquest of Assam. Assam Review, May 1928, p. 16. The long-term importance of Scott's march was that it led to the British occupation of the Khasi hills.

4 B.S.P.C. 30 Nov. 1827, no. 4, Scott to Sterling, 11 Sept. 1826.

5 B.S.P.C. 16 Nov. 1827, nos. 48-49, Scott to Swinton, 10 Sept. 1827.

6 B.S.P.C. 7 May 1824, no. 6, Scott to Swinton, 14 Apr. 1824.

The first phase of the campaign in Assam ended in July when some four thousand families.¹ Here in Nowgong, which was and still is, Col. Richards, who had succeeded to the command in Assam¹ returned to the granary of Assam, Scott first learnt about the paik system² of labour Gauhati after the Burmese retreat to Marawukh. Up to this time the result contributions to the State and immediately took advantage of the system had been decidedly in favour of the English. by commuting the service of 500 of the existing paiks in return for the supply of 4000 maunds of rice. The remaining crown paiks were asked to be in constant touch with Col. Richards, pouring out ideas and clean, store and to take care of this rice as their labour service.³ suggestions. He had ordered the building of cantonments at Nowgong², he

Not content with these immediate practical measures, Scott was urged the procurement of Tibetan mules, Assamese bullocks or Bangar soon assessing the strategic importance of Nowgong. On 16 April he wrote porters of Ranghar for the next advance into Upper Assam or the invasion to Calcutta recommending that the 2nd Battalion of the 23rd Regiment of Burma. But throughout July and August his great preoccupation came to should be posted at Nowgong both with reference to the expediency of be with Col. Richards himself, who wished to retire upon Gauhati after keeping up a sufficient force in Assam and also because the town was his success. Scott pressed for the continuance of the corps at Naha likely to prove much more healthy and better provisioned than any other chewky, whence the newly liberated Assamese could be protected from part of the frontier. The cantonment for the troops, he pointed out, Burmese revenge and the invasion route to Cachar could be blocked. To would be built by the paiks without any expense to the Company. Scott made this, however, Col. Richards could not be persuaded to agree, despite the further point that the maintenance of a body of troops at Nowgong was Scott's appeals to him and to Swinton. Scott feared that all would be also required on account of the marriage ties between the Burmese and many undone by the British withdrawal of their protecting forces, and he later of the chief inhabitants, whose wives, daughters and female relations had expressed his belief that if Col. Richards had advanced soon after the been given to, or forcibly taken by the Burmese conquerors. In consequence occupation of Gauhati, the greater part of Assam could have been cleared of this state of things the chief people of Nowgong, were, Scott thought, of the enemy - their numbers and their equipment being in no way formidable. A forward march, he thought, would also have effectively prevented considerable district in Assam.⁴ The general masses, Scott reported, felt the enemy from recruiting their finances by contributions levied from the utmost satisfaction at the arrival of the British troops.⁵

1. B.S.P.C. 7 May 1824, no. 7, Scott to Swinton, 16 Apr. 1824.

2. See *infra*, chapter IV. p. 7, Scott to Swinton, 16 Apr. 1824.

3. B.S.P.C. 7 May 1824, no. 7, Scott to Swinton, 16 Apr. 1824.

4. Ibid. B.S.P.C. 9 Apr. 1824, no. 5, Scott to Swinton, 28 March 1824.

5. Ibid. B.S.P.C. 23 July 1824, nos. 9-10.

The first phase of the campaign in Assam ended in July when Col. Richards, who had succeeded to the command in Assam¹ returned to Gauhati after the Burmese retreat to Maramukh. Up to this time the result had been decidedly in favour of the English.

Throughout this period, as government had requested, Scott had been in constant touch with Col. Richards, pouring out ideas and suggestions. He had ordered the building of cantonments at Nowgong², he urged the procurement of Tibetan mules³, Assamese bullocks or Dangar porters of Ranghar⁴ for the next advance into Upper Assam or the invasion

The government had recognized, before hostilities had begun, of Burma. But throughout July and August his great preoccupation came to that any advance into Assam would commit them to supporting its inhabitants with Col. Richards himself, who wished to retire upon Gauhati after his success. Scott pressed for the continuance of the corps at Raha chowky, whence the newly liberated Assamese could be protected from Burmese revenge and the invasion route to Cachar could be blocked.⁵ To any declaration on the subject of setting up a native prince in Assam, this, however, Col. Richards could not be persuaded to agree, despite he argued, was "premature and impolitic" as it would discourage the Scott's appeals to him and to Swinton. Scott feared that all would be undone by the British withdrawal of their protecting forces, and he later expressed his belief that if Col. Richards had advanced soon after the the last contest so as to remain no longer concealed even in the nearest occupation of Gauhati, the greater part of Assam could have been cleared of the enemy - their numbers and their equipment being in no way formidable. A forward march, he thought, would also have effectively prevented the enemy from recruiting their finances by contributions levied from

1. On 30 May Brig. MacMoline died of cholera and Col. Richards took the charge of C.in C.
2. B.S.P.C. 7 May 1824, no. 7, Scott to Swinton, 16 Apr. 1824.
3. B.S.P.C. 1 Oct. 1824, nos. 26-27, Scott to Swinton, 10 Sept. 1824.
4. B.S.P.C. 9 Apr. 1824, no. 5, Scott to Swinton, 28 March 1824.
5. B.S.P.C. 23 July 1824, nos. 9-10.

Nowgong and elsewhere.¹ He was particularly unhappy about Richards' decision to withdraw because it upset his plans for the establishment of commercial links with the country to the east of Assam. Even at this very early stage, Scott had opened up relations with the hereditary chiefs of Burmese-held Mogaon by sending Assamese messengers to his court. A withdrawal now would destroy the favourable impression Scott had made and destroy all hopes of future trade relations.²

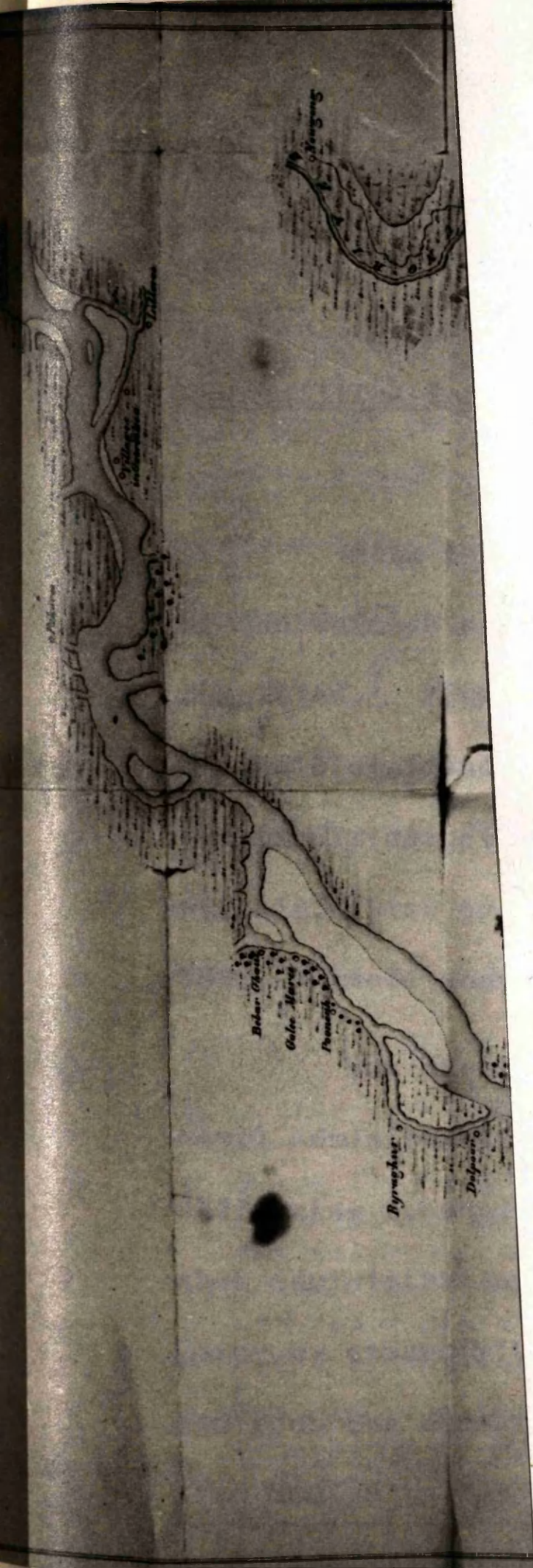
The government had recognized, before hostilities had begun, that any advance into Assam would commit them to supporting its inhabitants against the Burmese.³ But, as their enquiries from Scott made clear, they had in mind that such protection should be afforded by means of a defensive alliance with one of the Ahom princes. This Scott opposed : any declaration on the subject of setting up a native prince in Assam, he argued, was "premature and impolitic" as it would discourage the people who had lost all confidence in their chiefs, "their imbecility, cowardice and treacherous principles having been so fully developed in the last contest so as to remain no longer concealed even to the meanest peasant".⁴ Scott also strongly urged the annexation of the southern bank of the Brahmaputra as far as Raha chowky on the border of Cachar, so as to seal off the invasion routed^s into Cachar.⁵

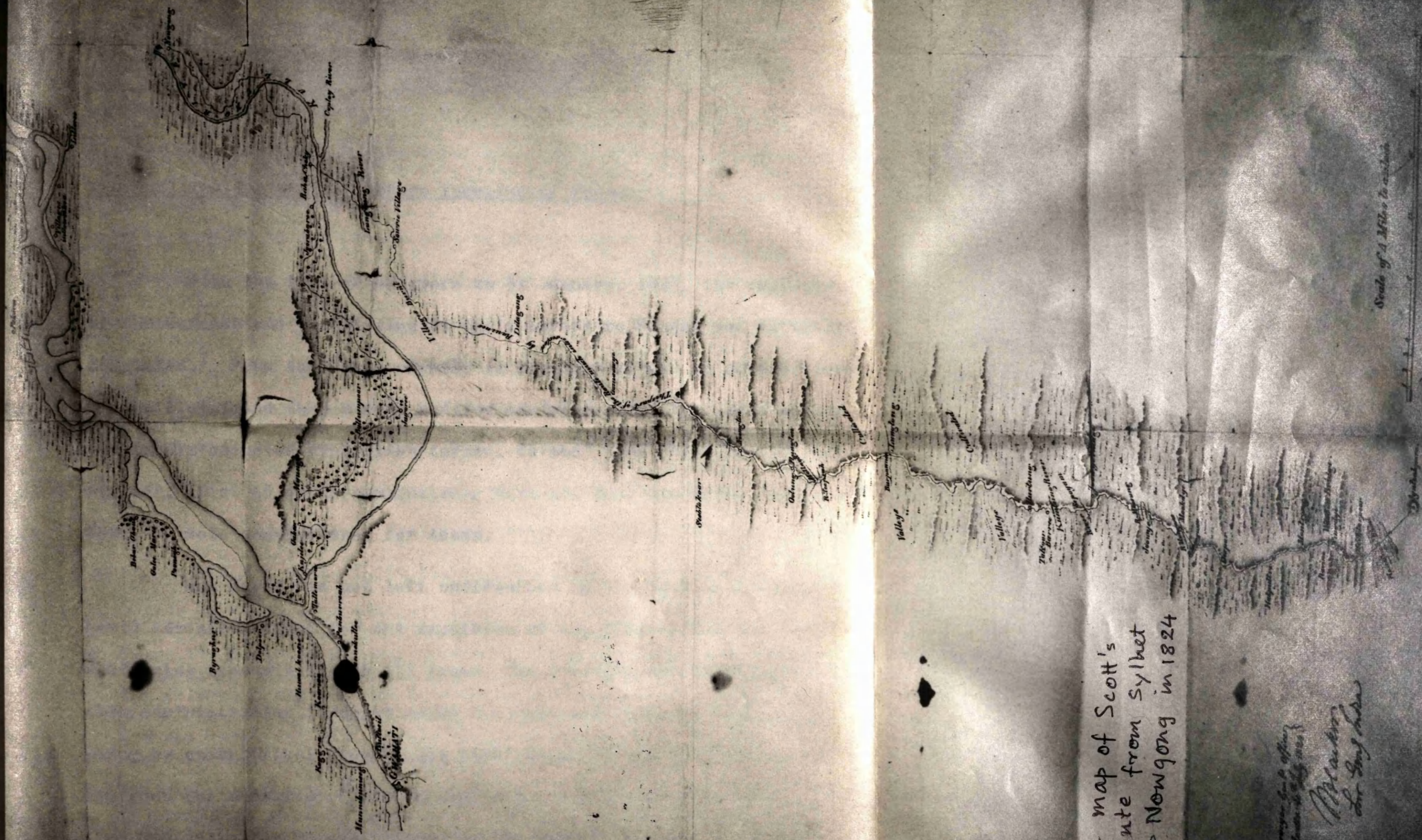
-
1. Home Misc., vol. 663, pp. 755-765. Scott to Swinton, 16 Oct. 1824; B.S.P.C. 29 Oct. 1824, nos. 25-26.
 2. B.S.P.C. 29 Oct. 1824, nos. 25-26, Scott to Swinton, 16 Oct. 1824.
 3. B.S.P.C. 17 Jan. 1824, no. 6, Swinton to Scott.
 4. B.S.P.C. 20 Feb. 1824, no. 7, Scott to Swinton, 10 Feb. 1824.
 5. Ibid.

Scott's views on the inadvisability of any commitment to the Ahom princes "much divided among themselves, and ... generally obnoxious to the body of the people", were accepted. So, after the occupation of Gauhati, was his desire to see Lower Assam occupied. Early in October, therefore Col. Richards was ordered to resume his advance from Gauhati, his task "the conquest of Assam and the entire expulsion of the Burmese". Scott, for his part was to win over the Singphos and other hill tribes and to establish an administration - revenue, police and judicial - in the wake of the advancing army.¹ By mid-January 1825 Col. Richards forces had reached Jorhat and before the end of the month the Burmese had surrendered their fort at Rangpore and thus virtually abandoned Assam to British control.²

1. Resolution of the Governor General in Council on 8 Oct. 1824.
B.S.P.C. 8 Oct. 1824, no. 4.

2. B.S.P.C. 18 Jan. 1825, nos. 4 and 7, Richards to Scott, 19 Jan. 1825 and 29 Jan. 1825.





The map of Scott's
Route from Sylhet
to Nowgong in 1824

*Surveyed by Mr. Scott
in 1824*
Blair
for Sir J. D. D. D.

Scale of 1 Mile to distance

CHAPTER IV

THE MILITARY DEFENCE OF THE NORTH-EAST FRONTIER OF ASSAM AND THE QUESTION OF AN AHOM RESTORATION

(1)

Tranquillisation of the eastern frontier of Assam

With the fall of Rangpore on 31 January, 1825, the expulsion of the Burmese and the lifting of their threat to Bengal was virtually completed.¹ From that date onwards it became possible to create first a provisional and then a more settled administration for lower Assam, now firmly occupied by British forces. To that task Scott, was to apply himself, first as joint commissioner with Lt. Col. Richards, and from 1826, as sole commissioner for Assam.

But Scott was not left undisturbed in the task of creating a civil administration, for the expulsion of the Burmese did not of itself bring tranquillity to all Assam. The collapse and overthrow of Ahom administration in upper Assam had made possible the grasping of power by other tribal groups. The first to challenge Ahom authority, had been the Moamarias.² They occupied the south bank of the Brahmaputra, from Sadiya to the Burhri Dihing, in the modern district of Dibrugarh,

1 For the enemy held no other fortified position in the province.

2 Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, p. 71.

2 For the early history of the Moamarias see S.O. Hannay, A short account of the Moa-Morah Sect and of the country occupied by the Bor Senapattee. India Office Mss.Eur. D 517.

4 Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, pp. 222-3.

5. Ibid, p. 226.

and though they were regarded as true Assamese, they had been distinguished, ever since the Hinduisation* of the Assam tribes, by their devotion to the religious tenets of a Guru who had denounced Brahmanism and taught a form of Vaisnavism¹. It was their rebellion in the 1790's against Raja Gaurinath Singh, which had "contributed so largely to the fall of the Ahom power".² But the turmoil they created was promptly used by another tribal group, that of the Singphos, regarded as a western branch of the Kachins of the Hukawng valley, who crossed into the head of the Assam valley and settled between the Patkoi range and the river.³ The Singphos, a warlike tribe added their ravages to those of the Burmese, and helped to depopulate upper Assam.⁴ A second invading people, the Khamtis came from a shan state beyond the Patkoi range, and though of the same stock as the Ahoms were distinguished from them by being Buddhists.⁵ They first emigrated from their native hills during the latter part of the eighteenth century, when the Ahom ruler gave them permission to settle on the banks of the Tengapani. But during

* Since the reign of Gadadhar Singha in 1681 the Ahoms had been actively patronising Saktaism as opposed to the Vaisnavite form of Hinduism. The reforming zeal of the Vaisnava preachers, who took the lead in the act of conversion, extended only to the inhabitants of the duars, and did not reach the hill tribes in the hinterland. See S.K. Bhuyan, Anglo-Assamese Relations. 1771-1826, pp. 18 and 33.

1 B.S.P.C. 17 March 1826, no. 25, Capt. Neufville's Epitome of the geographical and political information respecting the tract of country in Upper Assam beyond Rungpore ; B.S.P.C. 10 June 1825, no. 26, Neufville to Scott 15 April 1825; W. Robinson, A Descriptive Account of Assam, p. 326.

2 Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, p. 71.

3 See S.F. Hannay, Sketch of the Singphos or the Kachyens of Burma, p. 44.

4 Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, pp. 222-3.

5. Ibid, p. 226.

the troubled reign of Raja Gaurinath they made several irruptions into Sadiya district and at length ejected the ruling chieftain, the Sadiya Khowa Gohain, usurping his title and jurisdiction and reducing the Assamese to dependence and slavery. The troubles of the Burmese invasions merely gave them the opportunity to extend their plundering.¹ As a result of all these invasions and usurpations the lands to the east of Rangpore, along both banks of the Brahmaputra had been largely laid waste and left to the encroachment of deep jungle.²

All this area had so far remained untouched by British troops, and the reduction of the tribes to peaceful subjection and allegiance to the Company had still to be effected. When in March 1825 Assamese from upper Assam approached Scott for help against Singpho and Khamti depredations, he therefore despatched Captain Neufville, with Col. Richard's concurrence, to occupy Sadiya and oust the Singphos.³ A further extension of the British frontier, with all the complications which that must entail, was in the making.

For accurate information about the tribes of upper Assam Scott relied much on the information supplied by Neufville. Neufville maintained a regular journal recording the geographical and political features of this tract, including also the "barren, desolate and jungle-covered" foothills of the present North-East Frontier Agency. The Miris,

1 B.S.P.C. 10 June 1825, no. 26, Neufville to Scott, 15 April 1825;
W. Robinson, op.cit., p. 364.

2 B.S.P.C. 10 June 1825, no. 26, Neufville to Scott, 15 April 1825.

3 B.S.P.C. 15 April 1825, nos. 13-14, Scott to Richards, 9 March 1825 and Scott to Swinton 10 March 1825.

4 Home Misc. vol. 673, pp. 729-30, Scott to Swinton, 14 March 1825.

one of the tribes of this area, he described as a "nearly barbarous hill race, rudely armed with bows and arrows, and differing altogether in language, appearance and habits from the inhabitants of Assam proper," though "quiet and inoffensive."¹ But even before Neufville's advance, Scott had been considering what British relations with the people of the frontier tract of Assam might be. He was convinced that though hostile to the Burmese they would be incapable of effective resistance to those invaders "without a complete alteration in their intellectual and social condition which it must be a work of time to effect."² On the other hand their history of bloodshed, rapine and political instability would make it too dangerous to the settled lowlanders for the British to put such arms into their hands as would render them really formidable to the Burmese and capable of themselves undertaking the defence of the border.³ Indeed, Scott's first thinking was about how to coerce them into order, and for a while he even thought of using Burmese prisoners for control of the frontier tribes : "Upon the conclusion of peace I would propose to settle prisoners as cultivators in the lower part of Assam or in the pergunna of Mechpara they might hereafter prove useful as a militia to be employed against the Garos, Daflas*, and other tribes inhabiting almost inaccessible country with whom we are now likely to have dispute."⁴

1 B.S.P.C. 10 June 1825, no. 26, Neufville to Scott, 15 April 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 26 Nov. 1824, no. 11, Scott to Swinton, 9 Nov. 1824.

3 B.S.P.C. 3 Dec. 1824, no. 8, Scott to Swinton, 17 Nov. 1824.

* The Daflas occupy a vast stretch of hills and forest which roughly covers the western half of the subansiri division of the present North-East Frontier Agency. See B.K. Shukla, The Daflas.

4 Home Misc. vol. 673, pp. 729-30, Scott to Swinton, 14 March 1825.

But no breathing space was ever given for the working out with government of such plans, for in March 1825 came news that seven thousand five hundred Singphos, some six hundred and sixty of them armed with muskets, had assembled at the mouth of the Nao-Dihing and formed cantonments. The two Assamese who had brought this news also reported the plundering of the districts of Sessi, Dhimaji and Bardolani, the driving off of the cattle and enslavement of the inhabitants.¹

Scott was in no doubt that action was absolutely necessary. The strategic posts at Borhat, Jaypur and Sadiya must be guarded and the Assamese inhabitants of upper Assam protected. "The abandonment of that part of the country near Sadiya", he wrote, "would necessarily most seriously injure our reputation and character for good faith besides entailing ruin and misery upon thousands whom we are bound to protect,... and deprive us in the event of there being a necessity for a second campaign [against the Burmese] of all the local influence and facilities for ulterior operations."² The immediate task, as Scott and Neufville both saw, was to liberate the hundreds of Assamese captives. Neufville was asked to give every encouragement to such of the Singpho chiefs who might desire to enter into negotiations upon the basis of releasing all the Assamese captives taken since the date of the capitulation of Rungpore, each chief being asked to provide hostages for fulfillment of his engagements.³ Meanwhile Neufville pressed forward, for

-
- 1 B.S.P.C. 15 April 1825, no. 3, Scott to Swinton, 25 March 1825.
 - 2 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1825, no. 24, Scott to Swinton, 30 April 1825.
 - 3 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1825, nos. 23-24, Scott to Neufville, 8 April 1825 and Scott to Swinton, 30 April 1825;
 - B.S.P.C. 27 May 1825, no. 63, Scott to Neufville, 2 May 1825.

if the Singphos, anticipating defeat, emigrated to the hills - after reaping the approaching harvest - all endeavour to free the Assamese would prove fruitless.¹ When it was realised that the sale value of each slave, averaging through all ages and both sexes, was from twenty to eighty rupees, and that each Singpho was probably possessed of forty or sixty captives it was scarcely to be doubted that the Singphos would make every effort to get them away to the markets of their hill neighbours.²

Happily Neufville received the immediate help of the Khamtis and when he reached Sadiya a number of Singpho chiefs also showed a conciliatory attitude.³ Some Singphos who had turned plunderers during the Burmese invasions, when the only alternatives were to plunder others or to be plundered, now wished to settle down.⁴ But Neufville was also aided by a sudden outbreak of hostility between two of the Singpho chiefs, Beesa Gam and Daffa Gam, whom he was able to play off one against the other.⁵ After military operations in the territories of both these chiefs, Neufville's superiority in arms and strategy led at the close of 1825 to the submission of a number of leading chiefs, Beesa Gam included, and the liberation of no less than six thousand Assamese captives.

Neufville had inspired the Singphos with a real dread of British military prowess, and of the capacity of the Company's forces "to overcome

1 B.S.P.C. 10 June 1825, no. 25, Scott to Swinton, 22 May 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 Sept. 1825, no. 23, Neufville to Scott, 2 Aug. 1825.

3 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1825, no. 26, Neufville to Capt. Martin, 13 Apr. 1825.

4 B.S.P.C. 10 June 1825, no. 26, Neufville to Scott, 18 May 1825.

5 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1825, no. 26, Neufville to Scott, 13 Apr. 1825.

the discouraging localities of the country."¹

Early in 1826 Scott visited Sadiya and entered into formal engagements with sixteen out of the twenty eight Singpho chiefs. The chiefs promised their allegiance to the Company and abjured all connections with the Burmese or any other foreign power; they undertook to act agreeably to the orders of the British government in political matters; promised to supply the British troops with rice and other necessaries, to make roads and ghats for them, and to make such resistance as might be required in case of foreign invasion; agreed to release all Assamese captives detained by them, and to arrest and deliver any Singpho who might seek shelter in their territories after committing depredations on the Assamese. They also promised to deliver into the custody of the political agent a son or a nephew or a brother as hostage. In return Scott promised British protection and freedom from revenue dues. They would also be left to administer justice in their respective villages, according to former custom, and to settle disputes among their dependants, with the provision that should any quarrel take place between villages they would not take recourse to arms but refer the matter to the British authorities for a decision.²

To the twelve chiefs who had failed to attend the meeting, Scott issued a proclamation inviting them to come down from the hills within two months and to subscribe to the agreement taken from the rest

1 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 June 1826.

2 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 10, Scott to Swinton, 12 June 1826.

2 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1825, no. 23, Scott to Neulville, 8 Apr. 1825.

of the tribe. They were threatened that if they failed to do so their properties would be confiscated and they would be expelled from Assam altogether.¹

The execution and strategy of the advance to Sadiya and the reduction of the Singpho strongholds had been Neufville's : it was his energy, ability and intrepidity, aided by the efforts of the Khamti auxiliaries and the Assamese captives themselves, which had so quickly lifted the Singpho terror. With the restoration of order, however, Scott had to consider under what plan that order should in future be maintained.

While Neufville was subduing the Singphos, Scott in April 1825 had been suggesting to the Calcutta authorities the possibility of granting stipends to some of the more influential chiefs in return for their defending the passes through the mountains to the south-east, and with the language of the interpreters, and consequently he liable to be in return for their prevention of any raids upon the lowlands. As an example of what might be done he referred to the similar measures adopted by Cleveland in the Bhagalpur hills.² Scott also thought of settling various Singpho chiefs in the plains, where whole tracts were lying waste. With such tangible and increasingly valuable possessions, he hoped they would reform their predatory habits. Useful employment might be given to the more restless part of the community by establishing a corps upon the same plan as that of the Bhagalpur rangers, or by incorporating a certain number of men furnished by each chief with the Rungpore Light

1 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 June 1826.

2 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1825, no. 23, Scott to Neufville, 8 Apr. 1825.

Infantry.¹ to a remote part ...".¹ Scott therefore urged long-term

appointments. In June 1826, after his visit to Sadiya, Scott sent his revised plans to Swinton. Firstly, considering the remoteness of the situation from the British head quarters in Assam, and the incongruous and conflicting interests of the petty chiefs, Scott thought that a European officer ought to be permanently posted in Sadiya with one other European assistant.² These officers, who should have both civil and military powers, would organise and gradually increase the military resources of the country to prevent any recurrence of predatory incursions in future. They would also have an opportunity closely to study the problems of the tribes.² Scott was careful to stress to government that the latter object could not be effected by means of a succession of officers incidentally detached in command of the post. Such officers would necessarily be unacquainted with local politics and circumstances, and with the language of the interpreters, and consequently be liable to be misled "by the artful misrepresentations of interested persons."³ This point was a very important one, wherever sympathetic understanding of tribal peoples had to be achieved. A modern work on the North-West Frontier makes, from experiences just the same point : "what was wanted was that British officers should deal directly with the tribes, win their confidence, and inspire respect". But the author comments that even the interest and imagination of both Bedingfield and Neuville. In June successful officers "were not exempt from the possibility of a sudden

1 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1825, no. 24, Scott to Swinton, 30 Apr. 1825;
B.S.P.C. 27 May 1825, no. 63, Scott to Neuville, 2 May 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 June 1826.

3 Ibid. 14 July 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 June 1826.

transfer to a remote part ...".¹ Scott therefore urged long-term appointments, and pressed the qualifications of Captain Neufville and Lieutenant Bedingfield for them. The former had clearly shown his initiative and his peculiar fitness for work with the tribes, while the latter, who had commanded at Sadiya, was well qualified by his knowledge of the Assamese language and his pleasant and conciliatory manner towards the natives.²

The other part of the plan Scott submitted to government was for the establishment at Sadiya of a corps of militia, six hundred strong, to be drawn from the followers of the Barsenapati, the Moamaria chief, and the Sadiya Khowa Gohain, a Khamti chief. These two had early aided Neufville, and by this time had completely allied themselves to the Company by deeds of allegiance and by the Company's counter-recognition of their feudatory status in May 1826.³ Scott thought them much more suitable than regular troops for the frontier, particularly the Khamtis, a fine, muscular and active race of men, hardy and laborious and much superior in military habits to the rest of the Burmese. He thought that if attached to the British interest by liberal treatment they might prove a very useful description of soldier.⁴

This idea of forming a native militia at once caught the interest and imagination of both Bedingfield and Neufville. In June

1 Sir William Barton, India's North West Frontier, p. 61.

2 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 June 1826.

3 Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, p. 71.

4 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 June 1826.

Bedingfield wrote that he saw no reason why, if armed and disciplined properly, the natives of the country should not become more than a match for any tribes they might be required to contend with. Considering the sad effects of the climate on the Hindustani soldiers, he saw in Scott's proposal the Company's best hope of establishing an effective force on the frontier. Drawing his idea from the old paik system¹ of Assam, Bedingfield suggested that as most of the militia men would be peasants, leave of absence should be granted to a portion of them in rotation so as to allow them to attend to their crops. To prevent them from developing lazy and idle habits in peacetime he proposed that they should be trained in building stockades, trenchwork, making canoes and in the handling of howitzers.²

In August 1826, Neufville followed with his suggestions, based upon a rather broader view of the whole situation. He accepted the usefulness of the militia proposed by Bedingfield on the Ahom model. He also agreed that the Company's regular Indian forces were quite unsuited to frontier conditions. But he argued that some regular force was required, distinct from ^{the} local militia, to garrison a fortified post at Sadiya. That force, five or six hundred strong, should be placed solely under the permanent political agent whose appointment Scott had proposed. Such a body, he hoped, would be fully sufficient to keep in check internal disturbance as well as border aggression in all upper Assam. A

1 See chapter V (1), p. 150. 22, Neufville to Scott, 29 Aug. 1826.

2 B.S.P.C. 21 July 1826, no. 14, Bedingfield to Scott, 4 June 1826;
B.S.P.C. 21 July 1826, no. 13, Scott to Swinton, 4 July 1826.

3 Ibid.

regular garrison at Sadiya would also be "productive of the best impression by convincing the people of the country in the permanence of our protective influence (of which they at the moment entertained great doubts) ... as to extinguish all hope in the minds of the refractory of a return to their former system of rapine and plunder."¹ He thought that for the force no men were better fitted than the Gurkhas, recruited for the hill companies of the Champaran and Dinajpur Light Battalions, who were "proverbially brave, active and capable of enduring fatigue both in hills and jungles, and free from those prejudices which the Hindus of the regular troops were invariably accustomed to." He proposed that the permanent force should comprise two hundred Gurkhas, one hundred and fifty Shan musketeers selected from the body at Singamari, and one hundred and fifty Manipuri horsemen.²

So far as the Singphos were concerned, Neufville would pursue a conciliatory but guarded policy particularly towards Beesa Gam, whose stronghold commanded the road to Moondong and Hukawng, the only direction from which any attack might be apprehended in future. He anticipated that before long this would prove to be a "route of considerable traffic." He suggested that a party from the permanent force might be stationed there or in Daffa Gam's territory until the road was cleared.³

Scott's plans for curbing the Singpho menace did not end with
 Since the Supreme Government was planning to disband the corps
 of regulars operating on the Assam frontier and to move military head-

1 B.S.P.C. 10 Nov. 1826, no. 21, Scott to Swinton, 12 Oct. 1826.

2 Ibid. Swinton to Scott, 7 March 1828.

3 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, nos. 14-16, Neufville to Scott, 15 Apr. 1828;

4 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, nos. 4-5, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828;

5 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, nos. 14-16, Neufville to Scott, 15 Apr. 1828;

6 B.S.P.C. 17 Oct. 1828, no. 1, Neufville to Scott, 4 Sept. 1828;

7 B.S.P.C. 29 Jan. 1830, no. 2, Rutherford to Neufville, 7 Jan. 1830.

quarters to Sylhet, Scott thought Neufville's proposals particularly useful. The experience at Bishnath during the monsoon, when seven hundred men of the 13th Regiment were unfit for duty, but the Rangpore Local Corps suffered only the normal incidence of sickness, also convinced him of its wisdom.¹ Scott further hoped that the shyam musketeers and the Manipuri horsemen might be settled as jagirdars so that the only men to whom it would be necessary to give full pay would be the companies of Gurkhas.²

A Sadiya militia was ultimately formed in 1827 four hundred and fifty strong, each man receiving from the government land worth ten rupees a year and batta during the time he was being drilled.³ Any further stay of the regular troops in Assam being thought unnecessary, it was decided that the Rangpore Local Corps, with the necessary addition of the Gurkha companies should be entrusted with the regulars' military duties in Assam⁴ under Neufville's immediate care and command.⁵ Lt. Rutherford was employed in Sadiya as Neufville's assistant in lieu of Lt. Bedingfield,⁶ as he supervised the constructions of a fort and stockade at Sadiya.⁷

Scott's plans for curbing the Singpho menace did not end with

1 B.S.P.C. 10 Nov. 1826, no. 21, Scott to Swinton, 12 Oct. 1826.

2 Ibid. Again in 1824, the surveyor general, Blacker, had written ent-

3 B.S.P.C. 28 Sept. 1827, nos. 54-55, Scott to Swinton, 3 Sept. 1827.

4 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, nos. 4-8, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828;
J. Butler, Swinton to Scott, 7 March 1828.

5 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, nos. 14-16, Neufville to Scott, 15 Apr. 1828;
Sterling to Scott, 2 May 1828.

6 B.S.P.C. 17 Oct. 1828, no. 1, Neufville to Scott, 4 Sept. 1828;
no. 3, Swinton to Scott, 17 Oct. 1828.

7 B.S.P.C. 29 Jan. 1830, no. 2, Rutherford to Neufville, 7 Jan. 1830.

the adoption by the government of these military dispositions. He realised that the Singphos like the Garos needed to be won over to a new way of life, if their predatory raids were to be stopped. Their social organisation was peculiar. The whole of their field work was performed by the women and by Assamese slaves; "the men delight in lounging about the villages and basking in the sun when not engaged in hunting or war".¹ Proud, vindictive, improvident and hopelessly indolent², they were unlikely to remain peaceful neighbours unless provided with some new outlet for their energies. His idea was to develop British trade routes to upper Burma through the Singpho territory by using the Singphos as middlemen. This he thought would give a profitable avocation, involving little physical exertion, to the hitherto marauding race and their predatory activities would gradually be extinguished.³

Though the need to civilize the Singphos gave a new impetus to the idea of trade across the Assam-Burma frontier, the idea itself was not new. In 1822 the select committee at Canton, faced with a closure of much attention was the Hukawng valley route, by which the Burmese had entered Assam in 1817 and in 1820, and by which they returned in 1825, pointing out how easy it was for the Canton officials to prevent their petitions reaching Peking, and asking that the Calcutta authorities should explore the possibility "of transmitting their representations

overland ... by way of Sylhet and the province of Yunan" in times of crisis.⁴ Again in 1824, the surveyor general, Blacker, had written enthusiastically to Amherst about Assam: "Its interesting situation be-

1 J. Butler, A sketch of Assam, p. 8.

2 Ibid.

3 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 44, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828.

4 See A. Lamb, op.cit., p. 48.

W. Robinson, op.cit., p. 736.

tween Hindoostan and China, two names with which the civilised world has been long familiar, whilst itself remains nearly unknown, is a striking fact and leaves nothing to be wished, but the means and opportunity for exploring it".¹ Soon after the British occupation of Assam, Scott had set in motion a number of surveys, carried on under his direct supervision by officers from the surveyor-general's department. Various routes were studied within and beyond Assam, with an eye to their potential use as trade routes. While Neufville was travelling throughout the Khamti and Singpho territories establishing law and order, other young officers such as Captain Bedford and Lieutenants Wilcox and Burlton were mapping the area watered by the upper branches of the Brahmaputra.² Among the routes they studied was one from Assam to Tibet and Yunnan through the country in the extreme north of Burma inhabited by the Khamti and Mishimi tribes.³ This route however, could not be followed beyond the borders of the Khamtis as they feared to rouse the jealousy and suspicion of the Burmese.⁴ Another route which received much attention was the Hukawng valley route, by which the Burmese had entered Assam in 1817 and in 1820, and by which they returned in 1825. Part of this route lay in the territories of Bēesa Gam* and at the time when Neufville was entering into engagements with him, he was informed

1 B.S.P.C. 14 May 1824, Blacker to Amherst, 22 Apr. 1824.

2 See Ma Thaung, British Interests in Trans-Burma Trade routes to China London University Ph.D. thesis, 1955, pp. 20-54.

3 See R. Wilcox, Memoir of a survey of Assam and the neighbouring countries executed in 1825-6-7-8, Asiatic Researches, vol. XVII, pp. 314-453, 832.

4 M. Thaung, op.cit., p. 23.

* The Singphos bordering Assam, at this time, were said to be divided into twelve principal tribes or clans, designed after the names of their chiefs, or Gams. Every chieftain maintained his own separate independence and seldom united with any other. The principal clans were the Bēesa Gam, Duffa Gam, Luttao Gam, and Luttora Gam. W. Robinson, op.cit., p. 736.

that this route had both military and commercial value.¹

It was on this route that Scott placed his greatest hopes of improving trade with Burma, and incidentally of encouraging the Singphos in peaceful pursuits. By April 1826 messengers from the China-Burmese border area brought information to the effect that there would be a considerable demand for woollen cloth and other European manufactures in their country, in exchange for which they could give horses and silver. Scott gave every encouragement to them to return to Sadiya at the proper season of the year - November or December - when he proposed to establish a fair at the place.² This was approved by the government³ and silk goods of the value of eight hundred rupees were despatched from Calcutta, together with presents for the chiefs. Unhappily on their way the whole of the consignment was plundered. Though Scott at once applied for a fresh investment of goods⁴ the smallness of the sum granted, a mere two thousand rupees and the want of any officer to supervise the business led to the venture falling through.⁵ In 1830, however, Neufville took up the idea again.⁶ He recommended that the merchant adventurer Bruce, who was in charge of the gunboats at Sadiya, should be vested with the superintendence of the whole business at a salary of one hundred rupees per month, with a share in the profits. Neufville suggested that a consignment of English and Indian goods should be sent up to be sold at reason-

1 M. Thaung, op.cit., p. 24.

2 B.S.P.S. 19 May 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 28 Apr. 1826.

3 B.S.P.C. 19 May 1826, no. 11, Swinton to Scott, 19 May 1826.

4 B.S.P.C. 7 Sept. 1827, no. 17, Scott to Swinton, 18 Aug. 1827.

5 Ibid.

6 B. P.C. 14 May 1830, no. 29, Scott to Swinton, 22 Apr. 1830.

able prices in exchange for ivory, amber, musk, manjit, copper, daus and spears. Even if the demand at Sadiya was insufficient to take off the whole consignment, he was sure that the goods he specified would find a sale in Assam at fifty to one hundred percent profit.¹ The consignment he suggested for the following cold weather was this :

1000 yds of coarse scarlet broadcloth		
at two rupees per yard	-	Sicca rupees 2,000
150 yds of bright yellow broadcloth		
for the priest		
at two rupees per yard	-	300
100 yds of red baize		
at one rupee per yard	-	100
600 yds of chintzes		
at five annas per yard	-	188
white long cloth	-	200
Book muslins	-	50
coloured cotton handkerchiefs	-	100
Lascars red caps	-	100
velvet, black and red (china)	-	200
Kincobs, three pieces		
at fifty rupees each	-	150
Flints	-	100
opium, red battan [?]		
blankets, eria* cloth and		
produce of Assam	-	1 000
Boat hire from Calcutta and		
insurance	-	312
Total Sicca rupees		5,000 ²

1 B.P.C. 14 May 1830, no. 29, Neufville to Scott, 27 Jan. 1830.

* The eri or eria cloth is one of the three varieties of silk produced in Assam. The other two are the muga and pat. The cloth is light, strong, and remarkably durable, and it washes well. Kamrup is the largest eri-producing tract in the province. The Rabhas, Kacharis and Meches are expert in the cultivation of eri worm (attacus ricini). See B.C. Allen, Monograph on the silk cloth of Assam, pp. 4-14.

2 B.P.C. 14 May 1830, no. 29, Neufville to Scott, 27 Jan. 1830.

4. Ibid.

Neufville also thought it desirable to allow the principal Singpho chiefs to take merchandize for the first year on credit under engagements of payment at the ensuing fair. He had already lent four hundred rupees to the Bisa Gam upon such conditions, to test his integrity. Neufville hoped that eventually this trade would extend through the Hukawng valley to Mogaung, on the upper Irrawaddy.¹ The government approved the proposal and Scott and Neufville were allowed to try the experiment.²

This study of the tranquillization of the eastern frontier cannot be concluded without referring to another of Captain Neufville's projects. Major S.F. Hannay tells us³ that Capt. Neufville negotiated with Laong, the Amat Gyee, or deputy governor of Maing Kwan with a view to bringing a large number of the Shan population of the Maing Kwan province to Assam. Unfortunately, however, the Burmese got intimation of this confidential negotiation and Laong was taken to Ava and executed.

Hannay writes that "as a political measure nothing could have been better for upper Assam at that time, than the transfer of a large body of the Shan race into the province, as under the able management of that officer, the eventual benefit to be derived from the accession of an energetic population, with knowledge in the useful arts, and habits of industry unknown to the Assamese of the present day, was certain".⁴

1 B.P.C. 14 May 1830, no. 29, Neufville to Scott, 27 Jan. 1830.

2 B.P.C. 14 May 1830, no. 30, Swinton to Scott, 14 May 1830.

3. S.F. Hannay, Notes on the Shans. part II. Shans of Assam, pp. 15-16.

4. Ibid.

According to Hannay the benefit to upper Assam in regard to trade in muga* silk alone would have been great, for the Shan population of the middle and lower Chindwin river, together with the large Burmese population situated between the lower Pangam and the Irrawaddy, would have consumed every particle of that article which could have been produced by the Assamese.¹ The Shan districts of the upper Chindwin lay only six marches although by a mountainous route from Rangpore. Had Neufville lived, Hannay argues, he would surely have succeeded in opening up a route so full of possibilities for upper Assamese trade, as also links with the Chinese markets of the Yunnan frontier.²

The Singpho trade, though it continued during the remaining period of Scott's life, and for four years afterwards³ did not serve the purpose of transforming the habits of the Singphos. But the effort to establish a market at Sadiya was more successful, and in July 1834 the first four Marwari traders, from north India, appeared at Sadiya, under the protective wing of the newly appointed British officer there.⁴ Moreover Scott never ceased to be optimistic about the wider possibilities of the Sadiya mart. Three months before his death, on 18 May 1831, he wrote to the government : "the evidence lately given before the two Houses of Parliament in regard to the obstructions offered to the intro-

* The muga silk comes from a kind of worm known as antheroea Assamoea. It is much lighter and handsomer than eri, and is largely worn by women, and as a holiday dress by men. In colour it is a brownish yellow, which after washing assumes a fine gloss. Sibsagar and more especially Jorhat, is the great centre for the production of the muga cloth. See B.C.Allen, op.cit., p. 14-15.

1 S.F. Hannay, op.cit., pp. 15-16.

2 Ibid.

3 M. Thaung, op.cit., p. 21.

4 Ibid.

duction of British woollens from Canton into the interior of China by the imposition of high duties seems fully to confirm the expediency of endeavouring to open other more direct channels of communication with the inland provinces of that empire from some of which Sadiya is distant little more than 200 miles".¹

of the Ahom monarchy and the restoration of Ahom monarchy in Upper Assam.

The peace and order brought by Scott to the frontier of upper Assam continued for many years after his death, except for a rising in 1839 which followed the death of Salan Sadiya Khowa Gohain, the Khamti chief, with whom agreement had been reached on the 15 May 1826.² In that year the Khamtis of Sadiya suddenly rose and murdered the political agent, Col. White and many of his guards. The Singphos, too, joined in the rising. Despite this incident little change was made in the administrative machinery for the frontier for some forty years. As communications were made easier, the raids of the hill tribes became easier to suppress, and a number of hitherto independent tribes were brought under British control and were transformed into revenue-paying ryots. Throughout these years Scott's native militia continued to patrol the roads and passes to the north.³

1 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to Swinton, 18 May 1831.

2 C.U. Aitchison, Treaties, Engagements and Sanads, vol. II, pp. 252-253; Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, p. 221.

3 Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, p. 221.

to its defense; it would establish British good faith, halt the process of annexation and consequent breaking down of Indian society, and above all it would solve the problem of providing suitable employment to the

CHAPTER IV

Ahom and Assamese officials and nobles, thereby removing a major cause for unrest and rebellion. Now Scott came to hold and defend these views, and against what opposition, is the subject of this section.

(II)

The question of the employment of the Assamese and the restoration of Ahom monarchy in Upper Assam.

It has been said that most of the problems of Assam today arise out of an historical fact : that "a whole host of clerks and petty officials from Bengal came in the wake of the British rulers, as Sadiya for the British guardforce on the Burmese frontier had been one Assam was not in a position for some three generations to supply preoccupation of Scott. Another had been the creation of a new administrative order, revenue and judicial, for Lower Assam. There remained a third problem, which proved the most intractable of all, that of deciding what to do with upper Assam, the old Ahom heartlands interposed between the British frontier posts at Sadiya and settled lower Assam. Here Scott found his views running contrary to those of the Supreme Government, and though in the end his proposals were largely accepted he did not live to see them put into action.

Some high-ranking officials from the previous Ahom government were given high posts in the British administration. Scott wished to re-establish an Ahom kingdom in Upper Assam, with a constitution designed to eliminate the weaknesses of the old regime and the need for any detailed British interference. Such a restoration seemed the solution to many problems : it would relieve the Company of the financial burden of administering an impoverished, devastated country; it would lessen tension on the frontier and contribute to its defense; it would establish British good faith, halt the process of annexation and consequent breaking down of Indian society, and above all it would solve the problem of providing suitable employment to the

hierarchy of new officials, operating a new legal and administrative machinery, through a new language opened the way to widespread exploitation, social and economic, of the old society. The appearance of Bruce, and against what opposition, is the subject of this section. the merchant-adventurer who reported the possibilities of tea cultivation in Assam¹, the penetration of Marwari traders to the new market at Sadiya², the installation of Bengali tahsildars in Upper Assam³ were

It has been said that most of the problems of Assam today signs of changes to come in the future.

arise out of an historical fact : that "a whole host of clerks and petty officials from Bengal came in the wake of the British rulers, as Assam was not in a position for some three generations to supply English-knowing personnel for taking part in the administration, and native establishment, set up by Scott as political agent on the North-East Frontier, will show how large were the changes introduced by the matters, made Bengali the second language of the administration and the advent of the British. Scott's establishment was comprised of three school in Assam".¹ The Ahom system of government was so very different from that of other Indian territories that in the preliminary stages of British administration in Assam, the Assamese could not be readily fitted into the regular departments of the Company's administration. Some high-ranking officials from the previous Ahom government were of police, customs or excise and their orderlies. There was also a given high posts because of their special knowledge in the revenue and judicial fields, but apart from these most of the jobs in the Company's service came to be held by outsiders.

The consequences were not limited to the loss of government service and social prestige by the old Ahom service aristocracy. In

Assam, as everywhere else in British India, the establishment of a

1 S.K. Chatterji, The place of Assam in the History and Civilisation of India, p.78.

hierarchy of new officials, operating a new legal and administrative orderlies. The pay for the whole establishment for the nine months from December 1823 to August 1824 came to Rs. 5,823, individual salaries varying from Rs. 43 a month drawn by the munshis to less than Rs. 5 a month for the chuprasis. Of all these employees, only a certain penetration in Assam¹, the penetration of Marwari traders to the new market at Durga Thakur was Assamese and he was employed in a special capacity as Sadiya², the installation of Bengali tahsildars in Upper Assam³ were as Assam Muharrir. His salary, including his travelling allowances signs of changes to come in the future.

Scott wished to soften the impact of such change, and as will be seen he did his best to give employment to Ahom officials in the native establishment list³ which they proposed for the two divisions of Assam. The pattern of offices was closely modelled upon the establishments in the other districts of the Bengal Presidency, and like them still bore the Persian titles taken over by the Company from their Mughal predecessors. In structure, function as well as name the munshis⁴, writing and interpreting Persian and Hindustani; one muhafiz-i-daftur, or keeper of public papers and records; six muharrirs or clerks; two tahvildars or cashiers; one dafturee who prepared the writing materials, and a few jamadars and chuprasis inferior officers of police, customs or excise and their orderlies. There was also a staff or interpreters: four English writers and interpreters of the Burmese, Manipuri, Khasi and Singpho languages, together with their

1 As far back as 1826 Scott sent to the authorities of the Calcutta Botanic Garden, some dried tea leaves from Manipur which were entered in the catalogue of the Company's botanical collection under No. 3668. Bentinck Papers, PwJf 2546 a; for Bruce's enterprise see A.C. Barua, Aspects of the Economic Development of Assam Valley, p. 79 1823 to 5 Aug.

2 See supra, p. 110

3 See infra, p. 134

4 They were: Rajkishore Sen, Hari Shome and Kishen Kant I Bose? I B.S.P.C. 22 Oct. 1824, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 1 Oct. 1824. 'The statement of sums paid to the native officers employed by the Political Agent on the North-East Frontier from Dec. 1823 to 5 Aug. 1824'.

orderlies. The pay for the whole establishment for the nine months from December 1823 to August 1824 came to Rs. 5,823, individual salaries varying from Rs. 43 a month drawn by the munshis to less than Rs. 5 a month for the chuprasis¹. Of all these employees, only a certain Durga Thakur was Assamese and he was employed in a special capacity as 'Assam Muharrir'. His salary, including his travelling allowances was about Rs. 20 per month².

In May 1825, Scott and Richards, the joint commissioners submitted the native establishment list³ which they proposed for the two divisions of Assam. The pattern of offices was closely modelled upon the establishments in the other districts of the Bengal Presidency, and like them still bore the Persian titles taken over by the Company from their Mughal predecessors. In structure, function as well as name the administration proposed was Anglo-Mughal⁴. The designation of many of the posts - shumar navis, or registrar; khazanchi, or treasurer; tahsildar, or district revenue collector were unfamiliar to the Assamese. Their method of working, especially the mass of forms, returns and other paper work, was totally unlike anything seen under the Ahoms. Ahom officials had never felt it necessary to keep written records of official day-to-day business. For example in judicial matters the Ahom

1 They were : Rajkishore Sen, Harishome and Kishen Kant [Bose ?] B.S.P.C. 22 Oct. 1824, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 1 Oct. 1824. 'The statement of sums paid to the native officers employed by the Political Agent on the North-East Frontier from Dec. 1823 to 5 Aug. 1824.'

2 Ibid. British administration was greater than it used to be in the

3 See Appendices A and B at the end of the chapter.

4 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 32, Scott and Richards to Swinton, 25 May 1825. which the raja of Assam was addressed.

Bagshis, Duttas, Pals, Ghosals and Guptas who were undoubtedly brought custom was to hear all complaints viva voce ; afterwards to summon the from Bengal to serve in Assam. Compared to these, the numbers of party complained against; and, if his statement proved unsatisfactory, Kakatis and Changkakatis - the Assamese officers - were were drops in prompt punishment ensued, without further delay for witnesses.¹ Indeed the ocean. Their jobs were also in the lower grades, and hence ill- White reported that the ex-Raja Purandar Singh asked Scott why on earth paid.² The names of those upon the new establishment list^{the} are not^{ant's} he and his officials were always so busy in taking down^a complaint^{is} available, but it seems very unlikely either that the trained Bengalis deposition, and that of his witnesses, and then summoning the defendant previously employed were then dismissed, or that many were suitable and taking down his statement and then again calling for his witness. Assamese suddenly became available. Indeed, throughout Scott's period For him it was an unnecessary^{ly} lengthy process where the judge, who was there was always a shortage of Assamese who knew the Company's system bound to forget everything about the case in its later stages, would of government. In 1829, Haliram Dhekial Phukan³ then the revenue be at the mercy of the amlah.² In justification of the practice of sarishtadar of Lower Assam, published a book on Assam called *Assam* taking written depositions, Scott is recorded as replying, "Swurgo Deo, Buranji". The book written in Bengali was distributed freely in Bengal you are of celestial origin, and can recollect everything. We are earth- and one of its chief purposes, as the author stressed, was to invite born, and when we go to dinner, forget what we have heard in the course people from Bengal to the Company's jobs in Assam.⁵ Prospects were of the day; therefore we write down what we hear".³ It was inevitable always better for outsiders, who were well-conversant with the Company's that when the system and its officers were so unfamiliar to the Ahom system of administration, than for the Assamese. tradition, the posts should be filled by experts, already trained in the Regulation system of Bengal. As a matter of fact, prior to the permanent arrangement of May, 1825, Scott had already appointed pro-

visionally, many people in the native establishment of the commissioner's-

1 B.S.P.C. 7 Apr. 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 10 March 1826.
office in Lower Assam. The long list of the establishment posts was
under Commissioner in Lower Assam for the year 1831 B.S. (1824/25)
filled with Rais, Ghoses, Sens, Mukherjis, Chakravartis, Nags, Nandis,

1 A. White, *Memoir*, p. 58. This explanation was said to have been given by the ex-Raja Purandar Singh to Scott who when the raja said that the oppression committed by the subordinate native officers in the British administration was greater than it used to be in the native rule, had to admit the truth of the comparison.

2 Ibid. cited by J.M. Bhattacharya. See also Bangadut, 7 Nov. 1829, pp.

3 Ibid, pp. 58-59. *Swargo deo* literally means 'Lord of heaven' and is the usual title by which the raja of Assam was addressed.
the *India Gazette*, appendix C of the present edition.

5 J.M. Bhattacharya, op.cit., p.1.

Bagshis, Duttas, Pals, Ghosals and Guptas who were undoubtedly brought from Bengal to serve in Assam.¹ Compared to these, the numbers of Kakatis and Changkakatis - the Assamese officers - were mere drops in the ocean. Their jobs were also in the lower grades, and hence ill-paid.² The names of those upon the new establishment lists are not available, but it seems very unlikely either that the trained Bengalis previously employed were then dismissed, or that many more suitable Assamese suddenly became available. Indeed, throughout Scott's period there was always a shortage of Assamese who knew the Company's system of government. In 1829, Haliram Dhekial Phukan³ then the revenue sarishtadar of Lower Assam, published a book on Assam called Assam Buranji.⁴ The book written in Bengali was distributed freely in Bengal and one of its chief purposes, as the author stressed, was to invite people from Bengal to the Company's jobs in Assam.⁵ Prospects were always better for outsiders, who were well-conversant with the Company's system of administration, than for the Assamese.

1 B.S.P.C. 7 Apr. 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 10 March 1826. Account of particulars of disbursements for the public service made under Commissioner in Lower Assam for the year 1231 B.S. (1824/25)

2 The one exception was in the revenue administration, for there the help of the Assamese Qanungos was essential and so the three top posts were given to three Majumdar Baruas - Joigoram, Kashi and Bhudhar. B.S.P.C. 7 Apr. 1826, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 10 March 1826.

3 See chapter V, section II, p.

4 The second edition of the book is published from Gauhati in June 1962 and edited by J.M. Bhattacharya. See also Bangadut, 7 Nov. 1829, pp. 292-293; Samachar Chandrika, 22 Sept. 1831; Samachar Darpan, 30 July 1831, p. 248; Tarachand Chakravarty's review of Haliram's History in the India Gazette, appendix C of the present edition.

5 J.M. Bhattacharya, op.cit., p.1.

The downfall of the Ahom monarchy started in the early years of the nineteenth century, and with it had gone, hand in hand, a decline in the influence of the official nobility. During the period of the Burmese invasions the nobles survived only in name and not in power or influence. With the removal of the central authority of the Ahom monarch, under whose peculiar constitution alone the official nobility had thrived, they received a further blow. At the time of the British take-over of the administration, the influence of the nobility was so reduced that in Assam, unlike other newly conquered territories in India there was no immediate political need to conciliate or destroy them, for the safety of the British power. The small tributary rajas and other malguzars of lower Assam were continued in their role as revenue intermediaries, and were thus satisfied. The officers more directly linked with the Ahom monarchy, the heads of the various khels and of the Ahom administrative departments, could be and were overthrown, the paik system came to an end. The regiments of paiks which the officers had once led melted back into the villages as peasant cultivators. Thus the British in Assam were not confronted, as they had been in the Deccan after the fall of Peshwa Baji Ras II, with bodies of unemployed soldiers and with political leaders who might oppose the British with force.¹

In the Deccan Elphinstone thought it worthwhile to grant considerable pensions to many of the Maratha sardars. He defended the

1 See K. Ballhatchet, Social policy and Social change in Western India, 1817-1830, pp. 77-103.

4 B.P.C. 4 Nov. 1826, nos. 71-72, Scott to Swinton, 4 Nov. 1826.
B.S.P.C. 18 July 1827, no. 3, Scott to Swinton, 28 Dec. 1827.

5 B.P.C. 4 Nov. 1826, nos. 71-72, Scott to Swinton, 4 Nov. 1826.

expenditure on political grounds: "if we had deprived the civil and military servants of every means of maintaining themselves we should have forced them to intrigue and raise insurrections against us whereas we now have some hold on them all from their fear of losing the little they have left if not from gratitude [for] being permitted to enjoy it".¹ Scott, in Assam, followed Elphinstone's example. Many members of the royal family, and many old Ahom functionaries who had applied to him for help, even for subsistence, were given small pensions, and allowances in money and paiks.² In view of the increase in price of many commodities, Scott twice urged, in 1827 and 1828, that Raja Chandra Kanta's allowance should be increased.³ He also gave small jagirs to various other members of the royal family who had resided in Bengal during the transitional period, subsisting on the charitable donations of the zamindars of Soosung, and the rajas of Cachar and Tipperah. They had returned to Assam without any means of support.⁴ Again, there were some individuals who had helped the British in their advance towards Assam after the declaration of war against the Burmese. They, too, were given small jagirs and pensions.⁵ As a humanitarian measure, a very nominal amount - 1 Re per month - was sanctioned to some twenty persons

1 Quoted in K. Ballhatchet, Social policy and Social change in Western India 1817-1830, p. 83.

2 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 33, Scott and Richards to Swinton, 25 May 1826; B.S.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

3 B.S.P.C. 26 Oct. 1827, no. 15, Scott to Swinton, 1 Aug. 1827, B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, nos. 17-18, Scott to Swinton, 8 Apr. 1828 and Swinton to Scott, 2 May 1828.

4 B.P.C. 4 Nov. 1828, no. 40, Scott to Swinton, 15 Oct. 1826; B.S.P.C. 18 July 1827, no. 6, Scott to Swinton, 28 Dec. 1827.

5 B.P.C. 4 Nov. 1826, nos. 71-72, Scott to Swinton, 4 Nov. 1826.

who had been deprived of their eye-sight by the former Ahom government.¹
Presents were also given to several men of position.²

These were all benevolent measures, but they could hardly compensate the ex-government servants for their loss of wealth, position and power. Scott realised that the employment of considerable numbers of outsiders from Bengal in the administration of lower Assam had made their situation worse. But he was equally aware of the extreme difficulty of obtaining local officials competent to serve the Company.³

What, too, was the lot of those who did join the ^{Company's} Comapny's service?

Scott himself reported in October, 1829, at the time of the massacre of Nongkhao, upon the inadequate pay of these officers and of their entire dependence upon it for the subsistence, not only of their immediate, but often of a number of distant relations too. This rendered it impossible for them to make any provision against unforeseen calamities.⁴

Moreover, the Supreme Government made it plain to Scott that nothing could be done either by way of increasing salaries or posts. In April, 1828^g, severe retrenchment measures were taken by Lord ^{William} Bentinck^h. The rising debt of the Company in India and the growing public opinion in England against the renewal of the Company's monopoly of the China trade caused concern to both the Court of Directors at home and such re-

1 B.S.P.C. 21 July 1826, nos. 10-11, Scott to Swinton, 14 July 1826 and Swinton's reply.

2 B.P.C. 11 Oct. 1828, no. 62, Scott to Swinton, 20 Sept. 1828.

3 B.S.P.C. 25 Apr. 1828, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 1 Apr. 1828.

4 B.P.C. 18 June 1830, no. 47, Scott to Swinton, 5 Oct. 1829.

3 B.P.C. 8 January 1830, nos. 98-100. Note by the Secretary in Scott's despatches of 19 Nov 1828, 9 Mar 1829; Minute by the Governor-General; Swinton to Scott 8 Jan. 1830.

4 B.P.C. 28 May 1830, no. 80, Swinton to Scott, 28 May 1830.

forming administrators as Bentinck and Metcalfe in India.¹ With the expectation of losing the profits of the China trade and the tea monopoly, which Parliament abolished in 1833, the Company had to insist that Indian revenues pay the cost of Indian administration entirely. The Company could qualify for the continued government of India only if the finances of the Company were sound. Bentinck's policy of retrenchment, however, was not designed only to preserve the Company. It came out of the belief that government should be as inexpensive as possible, so that taxes might be lowered and so that money might be available for progressive reforms.² The measures of retrenchment were so severe that we find that even in the minor matter of a trifling boat allowance for Capt. Neufville - an officer of proved ability and integrity - a long discussion had to take place between Lord Bentinck and Swinton, the secretary to the Governor-General-in-Council.³ A few months later, when Scott, considering the "heavy duties and responsibilities" imposed upon Capt. White, requested the raising of the latter's salary, he was gently reminded to cut his coat according to his cloth. Before any such increase could be given, "it will be necessary", he was told, "that government should have before it, a complete statement of the expenses, civil and military of the whole province of Lower and Upper Assam compared with actual amount of revenue".⁴ Under

1 See Bentinck Papers PwJf 2479. Extract from Sir Charles Metcalfe's Minute of 11 Oct. 1829 in reply to William Bentinck's letter on the subject of Lord Ellenborough's question.

2 G.D. Bearce, op.cit., p. 166.

3 B.P.C. 8 January 1830, nos. 98-100. Note by the Secretary on Scott's dispatches of 19 Nov 1828, 9 Mar. 1829; Minute by the Governor-General; Swinton to Scott 8 Jan. 1830.

4 B.P.C. 28 May 1830, no. 80, Swinton to Scott, 28 May 1830.

The most remarkable feature in the government of Assam that such circumstances the inclusion of inexperienced local people in the Scott found was the great power possessed by the three Gohains and native establishment became less practicable and Scott had to think of the ministers¹, who together formed the Patra Mantri. The offices of something else to placate the nobility and provide for the low-rank the Gohains were hereditary in the same families although not strictly officials of Assam. He thought he might find a practicable solution in inheritable from father to son. They had claimed and possessed the the restoration of the Ahom monarchy in Upper Assam. right of electing a king and also, but in concert with a majority of the nobility, of deposing one. The latter power was no doubt liable to great abuse, of which there were several recorded instances. But, as

Scott looked upon the restoration of the monarchy as a means Scott said, it had at the same time formed a salutary check upon the of satisfying the local people, high and low. He believed that a despotic authority of the king. Taking into consideration the serious restoration could also be made to serve the needs of frontier defence evils which had arisen in many of the states which had entered into - though of this the Calcutta Council were not to be convinced. Scott believed that both could be achieved by the same stroke of policy, and subsidiary alliance with the British government due to a lack of any constitutional check upon the ruler's internal administration of affairs that the restoration of the Ahom monarchy would not be a source of Scott thought that it would be desirable, in the event of the establishment of a native prince in Assam, to recognise and grant certain prerogatives to confirm the powers formerly exercised by the grand council or Patra Mantri. He also thought that means should be adopted for preventing collusion between that body and the king by strictly defining the authority of the latter and requiring that he should not take any the past history of Assam and to find from within the Ahom constitution itself the basis for constitutional checks against a despotic king. It appeared, and rightly so, that the aristocracy in earlier governments in Assam had had the right to depose the king. Scott used this as the basis of his idea of the government which he intended to impose in

The idea of preserving, with slight modifications, the traditional form of the Ahom government in Upper Assam led Scott to study the authority of the latter and requiring that he should not take any the past history of Assam and to find from within the Ahom constitution itself the basis for constitutional checks against a despotic king. It appeared, and rightly so, that the aristocracy in earlier governments in Assam had had the right to depose the king. Scott used this as the basis of his idea of the government which he intended to impose in

future. were Burha Gohain, Ber Gohain, Barpatra Gohain, Barphurhan and Barbarua.

The most remarkable feature in the government of Assam that Scott found was the great power possessed by the three Gohains and the ministers¹, who together formed the Patra Mantri. The offices of the Gohains were hereditary in the same families although not strictly large, such as the imposition of a new tax, to call together and con- sult a general assembly of all officers of government as far down as the right of electing a king and also, but in concert with a majority of the nobility, of deposing one. The latter power was no doubt liable to great abuse, of which there were several recorded instances. But, as Scott said, it had at the same time formed a salutary check upon the despotic authority of the king. Taking into consideration the serious evils which had arisen in many of the states which had entered into subsidiary alliance with the British government due to a lack of any constitutional check upon the ruler's internal administration of affairs, Scott thought that it would be desirable, in the event of the establishment of a native prince in Assam, to recognize and with certain modifications to confirm the powers formerly exercised by the grand council or Patra Mantri. He also thought that means should be adopted for preventing collusion between that body and the king by strictly defining the authority of the latter and requiring that he should not take any major decision without the concurrence of at least two members of the Patra Mantri - one of them to be a Gohain. In order to prevent the intimidation or improper selection by these officers, Scott further suggested that for the time being at least, they ought not to be ap-

1 They were Burha Gohain, Bor Gohain, Barpatra Gohain, Barphurkan and Barbarua.

2 Ibid. of the same period.

pointed or removed without the sanction of the British government.¹

Besides the Patra Mantri or standing council of state, it had been usual in Assam in cases affecting the interests of the people at large, such as the imposition of a new tax, to call together and consult a general assembly of all officers of government as far down as the grade of saikia or commandant over one hundred paiks. Such assembly was called a Barmel. The phukans, baruas and rajkhows comprising it, were usually connected with the noble families while the hazarikas and saikias, being removable by the paiks or peasantry, might be considered to represent the people. Scott was not able to understand whether there were any very precise rules for conducting the business and collecting votes in this assembly, but he thought the details could easily be arranged at the proper time. He considered it expedient that this institution also should be confirmed and properly organised.²

The role of the protecting state, Scott suggested, should be to remain as the guardian of the constitution; "to assure and continue to maintain its proper character without on one hand abandoning the interests or people to the mere will of a weak or tyrannical [ruler] or exercising on the other an undue influence and vexatious interference in the administration of the internal government of the dependent sovereign". The latter action, Scott feared, would "deprive him [the sovereign] of respectability in the eyes of his subjects and ultimately alienate him from our interests". With this note on the future restrictions on the

1 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 15 Apr. 1826.

2 Ibid.

native ruler Scott suggested, in 1826, that one of the two ex-kings, Chandra Kanta or Purandar should be elevated to actual power.¹

He argued that such a move would also be sensible from the purely financial point of view. The expected collection of revenue in Upper Assam was not such as to justify British administration there. The population of Upper Assam, Scott wrote, would not exceed 300,000 of whom about 40,000 might be paiks subjected to the capitation tax - affording a revenue of only one hundred and twenty thousand rajamohri rupees, the depreciated currency of the Ahom government.²

By early 1828, the shape of the future Assam had thus formed itself in Scott's mind. A portion of the Assam valley extending from the station of Bishnath (at the eastern end of Lower Assam) to the Dihing river on the north of the Brahmaputra and from Solal chowky to the Buri Dihing and Barhath (where the Sadiya frontier tract began) on the south bank was to be assigned to a native prince on the terms just considered. Such an action would satisfy the discontented nobles and also leave no doubt or suspicion among the neighbouring states as to the motives of the British government.³ Though Scott did not expect any organised political move on the part of disaffected nobles against the British raj, he did think it a political necessity publicly to disavow any British imperialistic designs east of the Bengal frontier. The

1 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 15 Apr. 1826.

2 Ibid.

3 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 4, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828. In this connection it is to be remembered that just after the conquest of Assam the Government proclaimed that it did not intend to annex any part of the conquered territory.

creation of an Ahom state would also preclude any move by the Ahom royal family and nobility to call in the Burmese or the frontier tribes in a bid to wrest Assam back from the British.¹

Scott communicated these ideas to the Calcutta authorities in a letter of 2 February, 1828. The government replied in March. They made it clear that they did not consider themselves pledged by any engagement or declaration whatever to restore a native prince to the throne of Assam. Neither did they consider such a step desirable or expedient. Scott was also told that the opinion which other states might form of British proceedings in relation to the conquered territory of Assam was a "consideration which might safely be excluded from the present discussion". So long as the policies that the government might adopt were in themselves just and wise, the government should not bother about the objections which neighbouring states might raise.²

The government then set out its positive reasons for retaining Upper Assam. Their first point was that the revenue of the tract had been rated in Scott's letter of 15 April, 1826,³ at about £180,000 per annum, exclusive of certain public domains which supplied grain and other articles of consumption for the sovereign's household, and in Scott's letter of 2 February, 1828, at about one lakh per annum. The government argued that this would yield a surplus, even after providing,

1 The relationship of the Ahoms with the Burmese and the tribes of the frontier tracts were not clearly known to the British, who could not therefore exclude the possibility of such an alliance against them.

2 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 8, Swinton to Scott. 7 March, 1828.

3 B.S.P.C. 14 July 1826, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 15 Apr. 1826.

on a more liberal scale than at present, for Chandra Kanta or any other aspirant to the royal dignity and after allowing for the necessary administrative establishment. (Since under any plan the British would be responsible for the general defence of Upper Assam, there would be no extra military charges if it were annexed. The Rangpore Local Corps¹ augmented by two companies of Gurkhas and aided by the contingents which Scott himself had proposed to plant on the frontier were considered adequate for all purposed of internal police and ordinary military duties throughout the whole of Assam.)

They then went on to argue that the native government which Scott proposed to revive would in all probability fail. It would be poor and have very limited resources; it would be evidently dependant upon the support of a foreign power; its princes in recent ages had shown remarkable incapacity and profligacy : such a government would lack respect and be all too likely to resort to oppression to supply its necessities. Furthermore, there would also be a perpetual hazard of collision and dispute between the wild intractable tribes on the frontier and such an Assamese government. At all events, the interposition of so feeble and probably ill-managed a state, between British territory and the frontier - the tranquillity of which was to be maintained by direct British control - would embarrass and complicate all the British arrangements and relations with the tribes in question and infinitely aggravate the inherent difficulties of the task of preserving order.

1 Raised in Rungpur, Scott's Bengal district.

As for the objections which the nobles and the hereditary officers of the state and other influential classes of the pure Ahom race were supposed to entertain against the permanent introduction of British government, these might be greatly softened, if not altogether removed, by acting on the principle of adapting the British system as closely as practicable to their actual wants, prejudices and conditions. This could be done, especially, by continuing to employ the leading men of the country in the discharge of the duties of their hereditary office subject to such control by the local European officers as experience might suggest.¹

Finally the governor-general-in-council drew attention to the difficulty of selecting the right man from the number of claimants to the throne, and pointed out that none of them had earned support by any aid given to the Company during the war with the Burmese.²

Yet however justified they felt in keeping the fruit of their conquest, the government did not like to ignore Scott's opinion altogether, and hence the subject was referred to Scott for reconsideration.³

A month later, in April, 1828, Scott related his case more elaborately, in the light of the government's view-points. There was still no insurrection or rebellion on the part of the nobles or any objection raised by the neighbouring states against the British occupation

1 The Government maintained that an example had already been shown by Scott when men like the Barbarua, Barphukan, Gam of Bisa, Barsenapati and Sadiya Khowa Gohain were vested with powers to dispense justice to the inhabitants of their divisions.

2 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 8, Swinton to Scott, 7 March 1828.

3 Ibid.

of Assam. Scott, therefore, could not stress the political necessity of preserving a native state on such grounds. Instead he chose to set

out in clear and forcible terms the political philosophy which had

underlain his proposal to create a native state in Assam. Scott made it plain that he deeply deplored that systematic overthrow of the local ancient constitution of Assam, with the right reserved of British Indian officers of rank which had been taking place in all provinces interference in the internal affairs of the government. "I conceive", acquired by the British in India. This, he said, was bound to happen Scott said "that we might sufficiently provide for a moderate degree of when an alien system of administration was super-imposed hurriedly in good government in Upper Assam by stipulating in the first place for an expectation of quick results. He feared that his own arrangements for absolute right of interference and by announcing deposit as the penalty native employment in upper Assam would break down one day by the gradual process of development of British administration. He went on, to be incurred by the prince who may persist in using his authority to the detriment of his subjects". Scott's other arguments in favour of "The systematic depression of the native of the country and the monopoly his measure were as follows:

of all official situations of emolument by Europeans have so constantly

followed the extension of our power that it must be anticipated by the particular points raised by the government. They had argued that in Assamese as a natural consequence of the annexation of their country any circumstance the military costs to the Company would be the same. to the British territory and whatever government might resolve upon at Scott denied this, arguing first that it would not be necessary per- the commencement of our connexion with Assam, I fear it would be in vain to station a regular regiment in upper Assam and secondly that, under a native regime, the members of the militia might be cheaply re- practice which it is so much the interest of the ruling class to extend remunerated by lands on the usual service tenure. But were the British and for which grounds are never wanting in the corruption and other authority once established, the militia would probably become discon- misdeeds of individual native functionaries. The reasons which now exist tant unless admitted to the usual advantages of the services under the for giving respectable official employment to the Assamese nobles were British government.

long ago urged in case of the inhabitants of other parts of our possessions and although their force was there also acknowledged, no principal result followed, but on the contrary the chief revenue appointments

then existing have since been abolished and a very general disposition

1 B.S.P.C. 27 June 1828, no. 115. Scott to Sterling, 26 Apr. 1828.

2 Ibid.

appears now to prevail to substitute European for natives as Saddar Ameens and as Seristadars of large estates".¹

Scott once again reminded Calcutta that the probable evils of a tributary government could be eradicated by taking recourse to the ancient constitution of Assam, with the right reserved of British interference in the internal affairs of the government. "I conceive", Scott said "that we might sufficiently provide for a moderate degree of good government in Upper Assam by stipulating in the first place for an absolute right of interference and by announcing deposal as the penalty to be incurred by the prince who may persist in using his authority to the detriment of his subjects".² Scott's other arguments in favour of his measure were as follows:

After this general statement of principle, Scott turned to the particular points raised by the government. They had argued that in any circumstance the military costs to the Company would be the same. Scott denied this, arguing first that it would not be necessary permanently to station a regular regiment in upper Assam and secondly that, under a native regime, the members of the militia might be cheaply remunerated by lands on the usual service tenure. But were the British authority once established, the militia would probably become discontented unless admitted to the usual advantages of the services under the British government.

1 B.S.P.C. 27 June 1828, no. 115, Scott to Sterling, 26 Apr. 1828.

2 Ibid.

of the 10 Scott also pointed out that the extent and the probable population of Upper Assam was such that the cost of Company administration would be as high as that of any other similarly situated Bengal zillah - Sylhet, for example. The officer currently performing civil duties in Assam had been drawing an inconsiderable salary and Scott saw no good reason why this disparity should continue after annexation. Moreover under a British administration, officials would expect to be paid their allowances in cash, but in Upper Assam there was a great deficiency of coined money, the people were unaccustomed to money payments, and native officers were usually paid with land and paiks. The more general consequences of shifting to a monetised economy in Upper Assam was described by Scott thus: "unaccustomed as the Assamese have been to the payment of taxes the lower order would probably look upon any considerable increase in that department as the greatest of all evils while it seems reasonable to suppose that the members of the royal family, the nobility, the public functionaries and the religious orders would view with dislike the introduction of our authority founded as it seems to me, it must ultimately be upon the destruction of their own".

Scott next proceeded to discount the government's fear about the development of hostile relations between a native administration in Upper Assam and the peoples of the north eastern hill tracts. The Nagas of the southern hills appeared to be particularly quiet and well-disposed. The boundary between the districts of the Singphos, the Barsenapati and the Sadiya Khowa Gohain would be so clearly defined that no cause of contention could arise in that quarter. The only possible trouble might come from the northern mountaineers, but since they generally held some

of the lowlands adjoining the hills, the Assam government had in its hand a tangible security for their peaceable demeanour.

For Scott, therefore, the only important point of difficulty in a restoration of the Ahom monarchy was that of the future military defence of the Sadiya frontier. The question was whether the establishment ^{of} by such a foreign authority between two directly British-administered areas would weaken that military defence. As in 1826, Scott held that the problem of security and the defence of the country would be better provided for under a native administration. The creation of an Ahom state would save the government from defence expenditure, such as fortifications, since these would be paid for by that state. Indeed, such a state, whose revenues consisted chiefly of the labour of its subjects, was peculiarly capable of undertaking defensive works. Scott further argued that the climate of Assam was proved by experience to be so hostile to the constitution of the Company's Indian troops and so destructive to the commissariat cattle that it seemed impossible without a very preponderating superiority of force successfully to carry on military operations there against an enemy not subject to the same liabilities of Assam and the Assamese problem with which Scott was so well acquainted. Nevertheless, such was the enormous regard for Scott's judgement and local knowledge that, being unable to convince Scott, the government preferred to follow a policy of procrastination "as a further postponement of its decision will not be attended with any material inconvenience after the delay which had already occurred".

the Assamese greatly in the case of any future rupture with the Burmese.

1 B.S.P.C. 27 June 1828, no. 115, Scott to Sterling, 26 Apr. 1828.

It would place them more upon a par with their opponents and render them at least capable of holding out until a force of a better description

could be furnished for their assistance. Considering the miserable equipments of the Burmese soldiers and their total want of artillery, Scott wrote that "it would seem, that in no part of the world would this artificial superiority be given upon easier terms than in Assam".¹

Scott wrote his comments in April, and by June the government had reviewed them and prepared its rejoinder. This showed that the government still held that an arrangement interposing "an ill-governed native state between the British frontier detachment and the head quarters of the British force in Assam would prove very awkward and inconvenient in practice". The problems of a non-monetised economy also did not alarm Calcutta : "in Assam, as elsewhere when tranquillity has been long established, commerce promoted and agricultural industry cherished under a judicious and liberal system of administration capital will accumulate and resources not be found wanting for the payment of a fair and moderate money assessment whatever may be ^{the} present deficiency of previous melats in the province".²

The rejoinder clearly failed to take account of all the peculiarities of Assam and the Assamese problem with which Scott was so well acquainted. Nevertheless, such was the enormous regard for Scott's judgement and local knowledge that, being unable to convince Scott, the government preferred to follow a policy of procrastination "as a further postponement of its decision will not be attended with any material inconvenience after the delay which had already occurred".³

1 B.S.P.C. 27 June 1828, no. 115, Scott to Sterling, 26 Apr. 1828.

2 B.S.P.C. 27 June 1828, no. 116, Sterling to Scott, 27 June 1828.

3 Ibid. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

3 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 58, Neufville to Scott, 29 Apr. 1830 and also no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

From June 1828 to May 1831, there was no further discussion on the question of restoration but events during this period showed how correct Scott had been in his expectation of troubles from the disaffected nobles of Upper Assam.

At the beginning of British administration in Upper Assam, Scott's policy had been to employ more and more Assamese nobles in the Company's service. He was aware of the unfittedness of the nobles for such tasks¹, yet he thought that, as a restoration of the native monarchy was bound to take place at a near date, at least some purpose might be served by grooming the future monarch and his nobles for their role. Thus, so far as the collection of revenue was concerned, efficiency was considered "a matter of secondary importance, which could not be put in competition with the superior considerations of conciliating the good-will of the most influential classes in society".² But the government's indecision about restoration - which prolonged British supervision of the area - and the coming of a vigorous officer in the person of Capt. J.B. Neufville to handle the affairs of Upper Assam, in 1828, brought a change in this policy. Neufville believed that the chances of a restoration were remote, and he therefore wished to re-organise the administration. The indolence and incapacity of the nobility, the impossibility of making them account for the revenues they collected without the use of duress, led Neufville to introduce tahsildars, who were all natives of Bengal.³ Neufville also removed

1 The most important complaint were: their irregularity in the transmission and preparation of their accounts and that they were unused to writing.

2 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

3 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 58, Neufville to Scott, 29 Apr. 1830 and also no.50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

from office not less than a hundred kheldars, who were in charge of revenue collection, and in their place employed various foreigners or Assamese clerks of inferior rank who, he thought, would be real "men of business".¹ Neufville declared that he could find no nobleman in the country, capable of conducting the business of a tahsildar entrusted with the task of collecting and regularly accounting for even 30,000 rupees.² When Neufville translated his ideas into action, discontent arose among the nobles who waited for the opportunity to come forward in an organised resistance movement.

The Singpho insurrection of 1830, following a Khasi rebellion in 1829, which we will discuss in a later chapter, created a situation which these disgruntled nobles of upper Assam utilised to try to restore their former power and position. Their first venture was made after Gomdhar Konwar, a prince of the royal blood, aspiring to become the King of Assam, had arrived in upper Assam from Burma towards the end of 1828.³ The prince at first appeared as a suitor to the British authorities, and addressed a letter to Captain Neufville, praying that he might be allowed to receive the country as a raj from the Company.⁴

1 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 58, Neufville to Scott, 29 Apr. 1830 and also no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

2 Ibid.

3 This pretender claimed to be a nephew of Raja Chandra Kanta and a relative of ex-Raja Jogeshwar Singha and traced his descent from Susengpha, or Buddhi-swarga Narayan who had reigned in Assam from 1603 to 1641. He and his father 'Dhutoowa Gohain' accompanied in 1818, their female relative 'Atan Neengh Timense, Bar Kunwari' who was sent down as a present to the Burmese prince by the then Raja Jogeshwar Singha. See B.S.P.C. 12 March 1830, no. 12, Neufville to Scott, 14 Dec. 1828.

4 B.S.P.C. 12 March 1830, no. 13 (I), Gomdhars letter of 23 Oct. 1828.

6 Ibid.

But this was a mere artifice on his part, for at the same time he was instigating the Sepoys to rise against the British. A little later Gomdhar declared himself Raja of the country, and excited the people to rebel against the Company's Raj. He also collected a small armed force. The disgruntled nobles thus got an opportunity to exploit the situation created by Gomdhar.¹ But their hopes were chimerical for the plot was suppressed in no time.² No sooner had it been suppressed than another was prepared in 1830, under the leadership of a new pretender called Rupchand.³ Rupchand too was supported by the nobles, many of whom were the remnants of the previous conspiracy.⁴ The leaders of this insurrection, the ex-Bar Gohain; the Barphukan, Haranath, Rupchand and Jayram were quickly apprehended. They were tried before a Sadr Panchayat which found all of them guilty of high treason and sentenced them to death in conformity with the custom of the country.⁵ Capt. Neufville referred this case to Scott for review and the latter confirmed the death sentence at least in two cases.⁶

1 B.S.P.C. 12 March 1830, no. 12, Neufville to Scott, 14 Dec. 1828.

2 Scott to Swinton, 14 March 1829; Proceedings of the Criminal Court held by the agent to the governor general on the N.E.F. and commissioner in Assam on the 14 March 1829 at Gauhati; Neufville to Scott, 27 Dec. 1828; and Swinton to Scott, 12 March 1830.

B.S.P.C. 12 March 1830, nos. 15, 16, 17, 34.

The patra mantri or the grand panchayat who tried the charges against Gomdhar gave death penalty to him. Capt. Neufville, the presiding officer, recommended a mitigated punishment with banishment from Assam for seven years on the ground that he was a mere tool in the hands of other conspirators among the nobles. Scott approved Neufville's judgement. The other conspirators who were also sentenced to death by the original Court received lesser punishments.

3 B.S.P.C. 30 Apr. 1830, no. 5 A. Neufville to Col. C. Fagan, Adjt. Genl. of the army, 30 March 1830; B.P.C. 16 July 1830, no. 49.

4 B.P.C. 24 Sept. 1830, no. 76, Scott to Chief Secretary, 7 Aug. 1830.

5 Ibid.

6 Ibid.

The action taken against the culprits in the second rebellion was severe compared to that taken against the conspirators of the earlier plot. The execution of the sentence was also significantly quick. In fact, Scott did not wait for the final confirmation of the Supreme Government. The reason was this : At this time Capt. Neufville suddenly died and Scott who was far away from the actual scene of insurrection feared that the removal of Neufville's strong hand might encourage the nobility to start a fresh insurrection. He therefore decided to make a public example by directing the immediate execution of the sentence passed on the Barphukan and Jayram.¹ In his view, the leniency, shown on the earlier occasion², had had no effect other than to produce another revolt. But although Scott took vigorous action to put down the second rebellion, he never considered severity to be the ultimate solution. Rather the insurrections and rebellions of the period led him to open the question of restoration once again.

The primary cause of the outbreaks had been the systematic removal from offices of the "indolent nobles" by the strong hand of the British. Scott now reported that if the Supreme Government desired to retain that part of the country under its direct authority he believed that more Assamese would have to be removed and more Europeans brought into the administration.³ The time had come when the British government could no longer recede from its responsibility for a proper European

1 B.P.C. 24 Sept. 1830, no. 76, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 7 Aug. 1830.

2 See above, p. , n².

3 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

administration on the weak ground that the revenue realised from the people were not sufficient. If it was really so, he argued, they should immediately restore that portion of Assam to an Assamese prince for in his opinion "an imperfect British administration must be worse than a native one, which, even if it wants in integrity, at least possesses a perfect knowledge of the laws, customs and prejudices of its subjects and an intimate acquaintance with their peculiar revenue system".¹ The installation of a native prince in upper Assam would put an end to the frequent plots and intrigues of royal pretenders, and, said Scott, "we should without any loss of net revenue worth mentioning avoid the odium necessarily attached to the exclusion of the royal family, the depression of the nobles, the neglect of the national religion and the disgust that is likely to be occasioned by frequent executions for criminal offences of a popular character".² Scott further remarked that "it would be contrary to reasons to expect" that "the members of the late dynasty whose ancestors have reigned for up-wards of five hundred years and the noble families which have enjoyed distinction for the same period should at once give up all their hopes of future greatness upon the appearance amongst them of a handful of strangers, ... we must therefore be prepared if we retain the country in our own hands, for a succession of petty conspiracies such as have already occurred and which I do not believe would be prevented by the allowance that it is proposed to make to nobles, of whom many must still

1 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May, 1831.

2 Ibid.

2 Ibid.

3 Post-script to Scott's letter to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831, B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50.

remain unprovided for".¹ Scott also made it clear to the government that if the decision to restore a native monarchy in Upper Assam were taken, the execution of it should be as quick as possible as "the elective nature of the former government has also had the effect of multiplying the number of eventual claimants to the Regal office ... and we have lately witnessed that in little more than a year the party late in rebellion in Upper Assam brought forward two different aspirants to the government".²

The chief objection of the Supreme Government against Scott's plan of a restoration had been that the intervention of a tributary territory would make it difficult to move soldiers up river in the event of another Burmese war. Scott, therefore, now put forward a new suggestion that the territories on the northern bank of the Brahmaputra should be retained by the Company and the southern bank only be restored to the king and the nobility.³ He divided the Brahmaputra valley into four divisions and suggested that the Jorhat division, extending from Barhat to the Dhansiri river, covering an area of 3,500 square miles and containing a population of 2,20,000 souls, with an income of one lakh of rupees, should be handed to a native king. As before, Scott was of the opinion that the power of deposition in the event of gross misgovernment should, however, be retained by an explicit declaration. This time he also stipulated that a certain portion of the revenue should be applied

1 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

2 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 59, Swinton to Scott, 10 June 1831.

2 Ibid.

3 B.P.C. 2 Sept. 1831, no. 3, G.V. Prinsep to G. Swinton, 2 Sept. 1831.
3 Post-script to Scott's letter to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831, B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50.

for the military defence of the country under the direction of the British government; that the old criminal law authorising the barbarous system of mutilation should be modified and that the Raja should make for gradual emancipation of the paiks by the substitution of money payment for personal service.¹

The Vice-president-in-council this time wanted to give serious consideration to Scott's suggestion. But the council, looking at the problem from the economic point of view, could not arrive at an immediate decision. The question for them was why the British government should be spending so much money to protect an unprofitable and isolated portion of land around Sadiya when the more profitable and populous parts of upper Assam were to be given over to a native monarch.² They therefore called upon Scott to report whether the defence of the eastern frontier could be safely left in the hands of the Singpho chiefs or even be handed over to Gambhir Singh of Manipur. Their chief objection actually remained the same : the inability to see how a foreign government could be installed in the intervening tract if the eastern frontier was to be retained in British hands.³ The matter was again referred to the Agent, but meanwhile Lord Bentinck had expressed his views on the question. Regarding the most controversial point, the retention of the Sadiya frontier, he supported the views held by Scott and declared that though "the maintenance of the Suddeya station would be purely one of

1 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May 1831.

2 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 59, Swinton to Scott, 10 June 1831.

3 B.P.C. 2 Sept. 1831, no. 2, H.T. Prinsep to G. Swinton, 2 Sept. 1831.

2 B.P.C. 2 Sept. 1831, no. 2, H.T. Prinsep to G. Swinton, 18 July 1831.

Appendix A

expense" it was nevertheless desirable. He feared that once the British control was withdrawn from that tract the province would be overrun by the surrounding wild tribes. So he definitely laid down that Sadiya must be maintained. The Council's suggestion of handing over to Gambhir Singh the defence of the eastern frontier, he turned down as fantastic, contending that the new chief and his adherents would be looked on by all parties with jealousy. Coming to the actual question of restoration, he observed that it was "purely one of policy". As the country had been conquered from the Burmese without the slightest assistance from the expelled rajas or from any other party, there could not be any moral claim for services rendered by anyone. He doubted any good administration resulting out of the miserably defective constitution of the Ahom monarchy but still he did not overlook the fact that "their continuance... for a period of time almost without example in History would seem to indicate something intrinsically good in the original constitution and at all events that it is deeply rooted in the feelings of the people".¹ He therefore came to the conclusion "that the native government may be established, aided by the support and advice of a British officer". Scott was therefore directed to furnish a specific plan for the institution of a native monarchy.² Scott did not live long enough to see the final restoration in 1833; but, before he died, the restoration was clearly within sight. The securing of this object was thus Scott's final achievement for Assam.

1 B.P.C. 2 Sept. 1831, no. 2, H.T. Prinsep, secy. to the Governor-General, Simla, to G. Swinton, Chief Secretary to Government, Fort William, 18 July, 1831.

2 B.P.C. 2 Sept. 1831, no. 2, H.T. Prinsep to G. Swinton, 18 July 1831.

Appendix AThe native establishment for Lower Assam proposed in May 1825.¹

<u>Judicial</u>		<u>Revenue</u>	
Sarishtadar	- 100	Sarishtadar	- 100
Ru-bakar Navis	- 60	Peshkar	- 260
*Muhafiz	- 40	*Depy. Muhafiz	- 25
3 Muharrirs	- 90	4 Muharrirs	- 120
2 Assamese do	- 50	*2 Assamese do	- 50
*Nazir	- 40	*Treasurer	- 40
*Muharrir	- 20	*Muharrir	- 120
*Jamadar	- 12	*Poddar	- 10
*15 Peons	- 90	*English writer	- 100
*Daftari	- 6	*Daftari	- 10
*Gangajaliya	- 6	office boat	- 70
*Mullakurani	- 6	stationery	- 20
*Interpreters	- 30	Total Sicca Rs. 625	
*Assam Pundits	- 30	* To act in both departments.	
Boats for records and	- 70	<u>Sadr Police</u>	
Amlas	- 70	<u>Sadr Police</u>	
Do for Nazir and prisoners	70	Darogha	
stationery	- 20	2 Daroghas	- 60
Total Sicca Rs. 740		2 Muharrirs	- 45
		2 Jamadar	- 12
<u>Jail establishment</u>		2 Dafa-dars	- 16
Darogha	- 35	8 Chaprasis	- 48
Muharrir	- 20	20 militia men	- 40
Jamadar	- 12	additional pay	- 10
2 Dafa-dars	- 16	contingencies	- 10
A guard of 30 militia men	60	Total Sicca Rs. 231	
additional pay	- 10	Total Sicca Rs. 231	
Total Sicca Rs. 143		Total 1739	
Total Sicca Rs. 143		Total 1879	

1 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 32, Scott and Richards to Swinton
25 May 1825.

1 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 32, Scott and Richards to Swinton
25 May 1825.

Appendix B

CHAPTER V

The native establishment for Upper Assam proposed in May 1825.¹

<u>Judicial</u>		<u>Revenue</u>	
Barphukan	- 300	Peshkar	- 60
Ru-bakar Navis	- 60	Depy. Muhafiz	- 25
*Muhafiz	- 40	3 Muharrirs	- 90
2 Muharrirs	- 60	2 Assamese do	- 50
2 Assamese do	- 50	*Treasurer	- 40
*Nazir	- 40	*Muharrir	- 20
*Muharrir	- 20	*Poddar	- 10
*Jamadar	- 12	*English writer	- 200
*15 Peons	- 90	and accountant	-
*Daftari	- 6	*Daftari	- 10
*Gangajaliya	- 6	office boat	- 70
*Mullakurani	- 6	stationery	- 20
*Interpreters	- 30	Total Sicca Rs. 595	
*Assam Pundits	- 30	* To act in both departments.	
Boats for records and Amlas	- 70	<u>Sadr Police</u>	
Do for Nazir and prisoners	70	Darogha	- 60
stationery	- 20	2 Muharrirs	- 45
Total Sicca Rs. 910		Jamadar	- 12
		2 Dafa-dars	- 16
		8 Chaprasis	- 48
<u>Jail establishment</u>		20 militia men	- 40
Darogha	- 35	contingencies	- 10
Muharrir	- 20	Total Sicca Rs. 231	
Jamadar	- 12		
2 Dafa-dars	- 16		
30 militia men	- 60		
additional pay	-		

1 B.S.P.C. Total Sicca Rs. 143 57-59, Swinton to Scott, 4 June, 1824

2 B.S.P.C. 2 July 1824, no. 16 Swinton to Scott, 2 July, 1824

3 Ibid.

Total 1879

of Assam was not considered tranquil enough for any regular system. The government thought it advisable, therefore, that punishment of offenders

CHAPTER V

THE EVOLUTION OF A NEW ADMINISTRATION FOR ASSAM

agent was instructed to attach much importance to the maintenance of friendly relations with the people of Assam and the various frontier

The development of British administration in Assam, during tribes of the neighbourhood.

Scott's time, had three stages. From 1824 to the early period of 1825

In April, 1825, there began a new stage of development. The whole of Assam, including the British-occupied western portion, whole of the kingdom of Assam having being now occupied by the British was considered enemy territory under British military possession.

Martial law was declared in June 1824¹ and a clear distinction was drawn between the respective duties of the officer commanding and those of the political agent of the governor-general. The latter was vested with the general management and conduct of all political transactions and negotiations with the Assamese and other native chiefs friendly to the British interest. He was also required to treat with the enemy but to take care not to interfere with matters of a purely military nature, though Scott was required freely and unreservedly to discuss all questions of general interest with the commanding officer.²

The management and collection of revenue of those western parts of Assam which were actually in British possession, Scott was asked to undertake either in person or through his assistant, Capt. Davidson, without calling in the aid of the military power.³ So far as the administration of civil and criminal justice was concerned, the territory

1 B.S.P.C. 4 June 1824, nos. 57-59, Swinton to Scott, 4 June, 1824.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 July 1824, no. 16, Swinton to Scott, 2 July, 1824.

3 Ibid. C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 24, Swinton to Scott, 5 Apr. 1825.

of Assam was not considered tranquil enough for any regular system. The government thought it advisable, therefore, that punishment of offenders should be left entirely to the commanding officer.¹ The political

agent was instructed to attach much importance to the maintenance of friendly relations with the people of Assam and the various frontier tribes of the neighbourhood.²

In April, 1825, there began a new stage of development. The divisions of Assam, Scott reported the settlement which he intended to make in the field of revenue collection in Saurup, Barreng, and Madnar forces and the Burmese completely expelled, it became necessary to devise some plan for the temporary administration of its internal affairs pending a final decision regarding the disposal of the country. The government resolved to appoint Scott - the agent of the governor-general-in-council, and Lt.-Col. Richards, the commanding officer in Assam as joint commissioners, Scott being recognized as the senior commissioner.³ In questions which might fall under the joint deliberation of the commissioners Scott, as senior member, would exercise the casting vote. In his capacity as the governor-general's agent, he would also be responsible for negotiating with the native princes of the country and the tribes and people bordering upon or living beyond Assam. But in such matters, when not personally present in Eastern Assam, he was expected to act through Lt.-Col. Richards.⁴ It was

desired that the commissioners should communicate freely and constantly

1 B.S.P.C. 2 July 1824, no. 16, Swinton to Scott. 2 July 1824.

2 Ibid.

3 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 26, Swinton to Scott, 5 Apr. 1825.

4 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 24, Swinton to Scott, 5 Apr. 1825.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid.

with each other, even on local questions, and so endeavour to preserve as much conformity as circumstances would permit in their systems of administration.¹

The new title of commissioner added little to the existing powers of Scott and Richards. What was important in the new system was the government's decision to begin a provisional administration in both divisions of Assam. Scott reported the settlement which he intended to make in the field of revenue collection in Kamrup, Darrang, and Naduar and other parts of Western Assam. The government introduced a provisional system of police and rules for the arbitration and adjudication of civil disputes. Jails were built in each division and the necessary establishment of guards and police peons were allotted. The pacification and settlement of the wild tribes of Assam and the protection of the inhabitants of the lowlands from their inroads also caught the government's immediate attention.² In the department of criminal justice, the senior commissioner was allowed to take cognizance of cases not involving capital punishment, in the western division of Assam. Each commissioner was made competent to receive complaints and take cognizance of offences in the first instance as well as to award such punishment as they judged consistent with the demands of public justice.³

1 B.S.P. Scott's responsibility was gradually increased. In August, 1825, and Swinton to Scott, 23 Sept. 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 16 Dec. 1825, no. 25, Richards to Scott, 9 Nov. 1825, Swinton to Scott, 16 Dec. 1825.

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 25, Swinton to Scott, 5 Apr. 1825.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid.

private affairs".¹ Soon after Lt.-Col. Sargent was appointed to the command of the troops in Assam, but on his declining to accept the post Lt.-Col. Cooper was appointed, on Col. Richards' recommendation, in November 1825, both as commander and joint commissioner of Assam. In sanctioning the temporary appointment of Lt.-Col. Cooper, the government observed that it would be unnecessary to maintain the present system of two commissioners after the return of complete peace, when Lt.-Col. Cooper's corps would no longer be required. The governor-general-in-council proposed, therefore, to abolish the situation of junior commissioner after Lt.-Col. Cooper's term was over.²

In the past while pursuing his forward policy Scott had not foreseen that any part of Assam should come into direct British possession.² His sole idea had been to help the Assamese to drive their civil management of Upper Assam having been from the beginning professedly a temporary arrangement, the Governor-General-in-Council conceives that the period has now arrived when ^{with} reference both to considerations of economy and to the forward state of measures in progress for the final settlement of the country it is expedient and proper that the charge of administration should be transferred to the civil authority".³ Scott's eagerness to bring about a settled administration in Assam, however, had been greater than government's. Despite the augmentation of his powers he had been handicapped in executing his ideas by

1 B.S.P.C. 23 Sept. 1825, nos. 13, 15-16, Richards to Scott, 27 Aug. 1825, and Swinton to Scott, 23 Sept. 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 16 Dec. 1825, nos. 26-27, Richards to Scott, 9 Nov. 1825, Swinton to Scott, 16 Dec. 1825.

3 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 8, Swinton to Scott, 7 March 1828.

2 See chapter III, p.

the government's indecision about their ultimate aims in Assam. In February, 1828, Scott had forced the issue by producing a plan for Assam and inviting the government to discuss it. He outlined the objects thus :

- 1) The realization of a sufficient revenue for the future defence of the country.
- 2) The restoration of a native prince in Upper Assam to his former dignity but with such curtailment of his ancient territory and revenue as might be necessary.
- 3) The tranquillization of the eastern frontier of the kingdom which for the last forty years had either been in a state of open rebellion or merely nominal subjection to the Assamese monarchs.¹

In the past while pursuing his forward policy Scott had not foreseen that any part of Assam should come into direct British possession.² No sooner had British forces occupied Western Assam in 1824 than Scott began to investigate the revenue possibilities of the area. His sole idea had been to help the Assamese to drive their even though no decision had yet been taken at Calcutta about the future Burmese invaders out, and to install an effective king on the throne of disposal of the territory. Some action, as he said, was essential if Assam, bound by a subsidiary alliance to the British. But the complete the future defence of the country was to be provided for.

demoralisation of the Assamese and the corruption in the ruling

Although initially Scott did not think there would be much authorities disillusioned him ; and soon after his arrival in Assam he began to urge that the best possible solution for the protection of the land revenue in Assam was not a simple one. More important, it bore eastern frontier of British India would be to annex Lower Assam and little resemblance to the Bengal system. When in the first half of the restore a native monarchy in the upper part of the province. But seventeenth century Assam was invaded by the Mughals, Kamrup was annexation involved the creation of an administration, especially revenue and judicial; and the question of restoration was linked with two major system which the Mughals introduced took root and was retained unchanged issues, the tranquillization of the north-east frontier of Assam and

¹ The question of the north-east frontier's tranquillization and of

1 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 4, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828. as soon as the conquest was complete, has already been treated in

2 See chapter III, p.

2 See supra, p. 142

3 Ibid, p. 512

its future defence and the winning of Assamese co-operation and goodwill. In the following pages the attempt is made to discuss Scott's ideas and the government's policies on revenue and judicial matters.¹ in size.

The system in the rest of Assam was linked with the paik or the khel system,² which was the nucleus of all Ahom administration. The revenues of the state were, (1) for the most part, realized on articles of produce and personal labour, for not only the soil, but the subject was A land revenue policy for Assam. any adult male or paik worked for the

benefit of the state for three or four months a year. In return for this he was given. No sooner had British forces occupied Western Assam in 1824 than Scott began to investigate the revenue possibilities of the area, even though no decision had yet been taken at Calcutta about the future disposal of the territory. Some action, as he said, was essential if the future defence of the country was to be provided for.² were con-

sidered the property of the state, neither hereditary nor transferable.⁵ Although initially Scott did not think there would be much difficulty in the assessment and collection of revenue, the system of land revenue in Assam was not a simple one. More important, it bore little resemblance to the Bengal system. When in the first half of the seventeenth century Assam was invaded by the Mughals, Kamrup was conquered and for some time held by them. In that part of Assam the pargana system which the Mughals introduced took root and was retained unchanged

1 The question of the north-east frontier's tranquillization and of restoration of an Ahom monarchy to which Scott gave his attention as soon as the conquest was complete, has already been treated in previous chapters. *Revenue Administration of the Lower Provinces*, p. 61n

2 See *supra*, p. 142

5 Ibid, p. 61n.

during later Ahom rule. But even here the British found the system much less regular than in Bengal, some of the parganas had talooks scattered throughout the division and the parganas themselves were very unequal in size.¹

Not all paiks were required to render manual labour for their gamati. The system in the rest of Assam was linked with the paik or the khel system,² which was the nucleus of all Ahom administration. The revenues of the state were, for the most part, realized on articles of produce and personal labour, for not only the soil, but the subject was the property of the state.³ Every adult male or paik worked for the benefit of the state for three or four months a year. In return for this he was given two puras (nearly three acres) of rupit or first class cultivable land. This land was called gamati or bodyland and was free of rent.⁴ For his homestead plot or bari also a paik paid no rent. In practice, the bari lands were permitted to be dealt with as hereditary and transferable; but the two puras of gamati, rice land, were considered the property of the state, neither hereditary nor transferable.⁵

Three, or less often four, paiks were formed into a gote or squad. When one of the gote was away on his three or four months service the remaining members cultivated not only their own fields but also those of the absentee member of the gote. Thus all the members of a gote could be employed in rotation upon public work during the year without

1 F. Jenkin's report, 13 Nov. 1849, Memorandum on the Revenue Administration of the Lower Provinces of Bengal, p. 62.

2 The system is said to have been invented during the reign of Raja Pratap Singh (1603-1641) by Mumai Tamuli Barbarua. G. Borooah, op.cit., p. 104.

3 Memorandum on the Revenue Administration of the Lower Provinces, p. 61n

4 Ibid, p. 60.

5 Ibid, p. 61n.

hardship to their families. Paiks were also grouped into khels or anchavat guilds according to the nature of their duties, each khel ranging in strength from three to six thousand men.¹

Not all paiks were required to render manual labour for their gamati. There were some who paid a tax in money in lieu of manual labour, though this was very rare and only a few khels comprising men of superior birth or caste had this privilege. They were called chamuas, meaning independent, and they comprised a higher order of subjects.² Those who rendered manual labour belonged to two types. The majority were kari-paiks who in wartime had to fight, and, in peacetime, were employed in building and repairing roads and bridges, in excavating tanks and in other works of public utility.³ The other main group of paiks were not field labourers but artisans - smiths, weavers, oil-pressers, gold-washers and the like whose skilled labour was applied by the state to the production of the goods of their craft or trade. They received their gamati lands in return for the products of their skills.⁴

Above the various paiks and khels there was a hierarchy of administrators and officers. High officers such as phukans, baruas raikhowas were the heads of the khels and the paiks were under their

1 S.K. Bhuyan, Anglo-Assamese Relations, p. 530.

2 Haliram Dhekial Phukan in his book, Assam Buranji (first published in 1829) mentions the following khels as chamua khels : Katakai, Kakati, Boragi, Dalaiganak, Jyotishiya, Changkhataniar, Sabhapandit, Bej, Strutiparha, Pharsiparha garia.

3 J.M. Bhattacharya, (ed.) op.cit., pp. 52-55.

4 S.K. Bhuyan, Anglo-Assamese Relations, p. 529.

4 Memorandum on the Revenue Administration of the Lower Provinces of Bengal, p. 60.

command. These officials presided, too, over mels - a kind of panchayat where minor civil and criminal disputes were settled. Under these officers were junior officers - hazarikas, saikias, and boras in charge of one thousand, of one hundred, and of twenty paiks.¹

It can be seen from this brief review, that, the Ahom state drew little of its revenues in money : the Ahom economy was a barter rather than a monetised economy. Persons cultivating land in excess of which Scott had to learn to understand, and to use or modify for the usual allotment used to pay a nominal cash revenue par pura of such ubar or katani land.² Again, some non-cultivating khels, like the gold washers, paid a high tax in money. Further, defaulting crown paiks had to pay a fine in cash. Moreover, the farming of the dues levied at haths or markets, and in the chowkies, or custom houses also brought a cash revenue to the state exchequer. The tribute from the vassal chiefs was yet another source of money income. Furthermore, during the period of civil strife and on the eve of the Burmese war, when money was required for war purposes the Ahom government introduced a capitation tax. This tax was variously named and imposed. The British found on their arrival in Assam, that in Kamrup it was a house tax, khari-katana, in Nowgong and Upper Assam, it was a body or poll tax, gadhan of one rupee for each paik of full age, and in Darrang a hearth tax (charukar) or a tax upon every family or person cooking separately again of one rupee.³ Even so the Ahom government could not pay cash salaries

1 For the power and position of the various Ahom officials as on which see Sir Edward Gait, A History of Assam, pp. 235-239.

2 J.M. Bhattacharya, op.cit., p. 52; Memorandum on the Revenue Administration of Lower Provinces, p. 61.

3 Ibid, pp. 61-62.

to its officials. Hence there sprang up another distinctive feature of the Ahom society - the payment of the official nobility in labour services. Officials were allotted the services of a number of paiks called likchows, in lieu of salary. They were also given certain rent-free lands nankar or maunmati land, and were also allowed to occupy vast tracts of khats or waste lands. On both of these types of land they could employ their likchows and slaves.¹ This then was the system which Scott had to learn to understand, and to use or modify for British government.

Salukan Singh of Rani and Sambadari Singh of Beltola were fixed at 6,349; 4,000; and 2,000 Narayani rupees respectively.² Lakhiraj* lands were assessed at 12,100 Narayani rupees and the rest. From May, 1824, though his powers had not yet been defined, Scott began a search for revenue documents of the former government, and made his first estimate of possible revenue yields. In view of the devastation latterly caused by the Burmese, he pitched the demand at to be an over assessment and Scott proposed to make a revenue survey about one-fourth of the rate of land revenue levied by the zamindars of Goalpara and of the adjoining Company territories. Even so thanks to the fact that Burmese damage proved on investigation to have been less extensive in Western Assam than anticipated, Scott hoped that with the custom duties from the Kandahar chowky he might secure revenues of up to one and a half lakhs of rupees from Lower Assam, up to Kaliabar.²

For the Bengal year of 1231 (1824/5) Scott's actual total demand from Lower Assam was Narayani Rs. 1,48,112. The areas on which

1 See infra, p. 241 on the Assam land revenue system, p. 69.
2 B.S.P.C. 28 May 1824, no. 19, Scott to Swinton, 12 May 1824; 1825. B.S.P.C. 2 July 1824, no. 15, Scott to Swinton, 15 June 1824.

revenue was assessed were Kamrup, Darrang, Naduar (situated at the foot of the southern hills between Habraghat and Gauhati) and land occupied by rajas of Dimarua, Beltola and Rani (lying to the south of the Kalang river). The settlement was made with a variety of persons. That with Raja Vijayanarayan of Darrang was for a total jama of Ny.Rs. 42,000 and 1500 paiks to be furnished for the use of the army.¹ From nineteen chaudhuries and other malguzars of the various mahals of Kamrup some 69,086 Narayani rupees was demanded. The assessments made with Uttam Singh of Dimarua, Balukan Singh of Rani and Sambadari Singh of Beltola were fixed at 6,349; 4,000; and 2,000 Narayani rupees respectively.² Dimarua, Lakhiraj* lands were assessed at 12,100 Narayani rupees and the rest came from the unsettled mahals of Kamrup entrusted to sazawals and from the raja of Naduar. These assessments concluded, Scott hastened to make the first half-yearly collection.³ The account of the revenue

1 The amount charged upon the raja of Darrang was thought by the people to be an over assessment and Scott proposed to make a revenue survey which would afterwards be extended to the pargana of Kamrup also. B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1828, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

2 These three chiefs "in former times were merely tributary to the Assamese if not to the Moghuls, but having frequently rebelled they were latterly reduced to complete subjugation. There were no accurate accounts of the assets of their estates, some of which are very productive and adverting to the expediency of conciliating persons so situated the settlement was made in a great measure, with reference to what individuals in possession voluntarily offered to pay". Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1828, B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 27.

* The lands granted by the Ahom rajas to temples, religious institutions and pious and meritorious persons in Lower Assam were known as Nisf-khiraj or half-revenue-paying estates, as distinguished from Khiraj or full-revenue-paying estates. In course of time these lands were held revenue-free, and the owners called themselves Lakhirajdars denoting total exemption from payment of revenue. See W.E. Ward, Note on the Assam land revenue system, p. 69. Dec. 1825.

3 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, nos. 27-28, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

collection for the first six months of the Bengal year 1231 (1824/5) was the following¹: The total received in the year came to Rs. 171,824.²

Mahals	Malguzars	Demand	Collection	Recoverable balance
Darrang	Raja Vijaya-narayan	21,000	12,831	8,168
Assessed pargana of Kamrup	The Chaudhuries	34,149	21,531	13,510
Unsettled mahals	Sazawals	2,188	2,188	-
Naduar	The Raja	6,180	2,133	3,547
Dimarua, Rani, Beltola	The Proprietors	5,089	3,294	1,795
Devalay [Lakhiraj]	The Managers	1,461	692	769
Total Ny. Rs.		76,244	48,255	28,881
Sicca Rs. (after deducting a batta of 37%)		48,033	30,400	18,195

House tax, first imposed by Raja Chandra Kanta in Lower Assam. This tax continued as a useful way to equalizing the burden of taxation, after this first half-yearly collection, though a sum of Narayani Rs. 28, 881 or over one third of the demand still remained to be collected, the demand for the rest of the year was much increased. The demand for the second six months was pitched at Rs. 106,255 and the collection was pushed up to Rs. 123, 569, though this evidently included arrears from the first half year.² Scott explained the increase

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, nos. 27-28, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 20 Jan. 1826, nos. 23-24, Scott to Swinton, 14 Dec. 1825. Comparative Statement of the Settlement for the Land Revenue of Lower Assam for the Year 1231 and 1232 Bengal style or 1746 and 1747 Assam style.

3 Ibid.

as being due to the bringing of new areas such as the mahals near Raha chowky under collection.¹ The total received in the year came to Rs. 171,824.²

The basis of Scott's new assessment was the documents which he got from Majumdar Barua the head ganungo of Kamrup.³ But they were of so ancient a date that they offered little real insight into the existing state of the country. It was too late in the season, as Scott said, to undertake any effective but lengthy scrutiny into the assets of the different parganas. He therefore acted upon "the best information immediately obtainable" in assessing the specific amount due from the different malguzars.⁴

The principle followed by Scott in the settlement in Kamrup district was to double the assessment on inalienable land which was found to have once been paid by the malguzars according to the old levied by the Buragohain Purnapanda who had been the prime minister documents. An additional amount was also charged on account of the House tax, first imposed by Raja Chandra Kanta in Lower Assam. This during the Burmese invasion nine years previously. The fact that the lands of this description in Kamrup were equal in extent to those cultivated by the paiks strengthened him in his decision. To prevent distress to the poorer class of Brahmins and other holders of such lands, Scott continued as a useful way to equalizing the burden of taxation, from which many "of the lesser order of the inhabitants" had been previously exempted on account of their caste or class.⁵

1 B.S.P.C. 20 Jan. 1826, nos. 23-24, Scott to Swinton, 14 Dec. 1825. Comparative Statement of the Settlement for the Land Revenue of Lower Assam for the Year 1231 and 1232 Bengal style or 1746 and 1747 Assam style.

2 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 5, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828.

3 The origin of these documents goes back to 1678 when after the death of Raja Pramatta Singh the first revenue settlement in Kamrup was made on the basis of a survey. These settlement papers were known as perakakats. J.M. Bhattacharya (ed.), op.cit., p. 41.

4 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

5 Ibid.

The settlement was made with the hereditary chaudhuries who were on the same footing as the chaudhuries of Bengal before the conclusion of the decennial settlement. That is, they were officials, not owners of land, or rent receivers, and were liable to be removed at the government's pleasure. When in office, they enjoyed nankar lands called maunmati and the service of a certain number of paiks. Their nankar lands varied from two hundred to one thousand Bengal bighas, and similar but smaller assignments were made to the patwaris - their assistants. Scott made no alteration in this arrangement.¹

To widen the tax base Scott also started collecting revenue from lakhiraj paiks and lands. These lands were classified as debottar - lands granted for the maintenance of temples; brahmottar - lands for Brahmins; and dharmottar - lands granted for religious and charitable purposes. Scott imposed a tax on these lands² using as a precedent that levied by the Buragohain Purnananda who had been the prime minister during the Burmese invasion nine years previously. The fact that the lands of this description in Kamrup were equal in extent to those cultivated by the paiks strengthened him in his decision. To prevent distress to the poorer class of Brahmins and other holders of such lands, Scott directed that it should not be collected from holdings smaller than two puras or about seven Bengal bighas.³

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

2 Sir W.E. Ward writes that "these lands had been assessed at five annas a pura (four bighas) by the Assam Rajas themselves. Scott therefore fixed their assessment at this rate, and subsequently increased it to 7 or 8 annas a pura by imposition of a tax known as Barangani. Sir W.E. Ward, op.cit., p. 69.

3 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

Scott, reporting on the country's agricultural capabilities, stated that the land throughout the division was fertile and produced far more luxuriant crops than any part of Bengal. A greater amount of capital was also applied by individuals to agricultural improvement in Lower Assam than he had witnessed in any other British provinces. This capital was also more profitably laid out than was usual - people taking great care in rearing the muga silk worms and the lac insect, both sources of considerable wealth to the inhabitants.¹

Thus from his actual inspection of the country and the information derived from the records of the Ahom and Mughal governments Scott felt that government might reasonably expect that within a few years Lower Assam up to Bishnath would be yielding an annual revenue of from four to six lakhs, exclusive of custom duties but including an abkari tax on opium and profits from the elephant hunts or khedas.

Mughal records, Scott stated, exhibited a revenue of upwards of Rs. 300,000 from this area. An annual revenue of over five lakhs would provide an ample allowance for the profits of an intermediate class of

agents between the government and peasantry. Since Scott also thought that it should be possible quite soon so to monetise the economy as to permit these revenues to be collected in cash, he now strongly urged that government should annex the recently occupied areas of Lower Assam.²

The prospects for revenue in Upper Assam were by no means so encouraging. Owing to the very great devastation committed by the

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

2 Ibid. P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 31, Scott and Richards to government, 25 May 1825.

Singphos, Scott did not expect it to yield more than fifteen thousand Sicca rupees for the revenue years 1824/5. Nor did he feel that a greater sum was urgently required for civil purposes in that part.¹ The actual demand made in Upper Assam for this year however was Sicca Rs. 52,695. The amount actually received was Sicca Rs. 28,057.²

In 1825, when they were planning their provisional administration, Scott and Richards had made it a principle to make as little alteration in the existing institutions of Upper Assam as possible. Accordingly in Upper Assam the collection of revenue was left in the control of a tahsildar, to which office Janardan Barbarua, a person of rank and substance and connected by marriage with the late Raja Gaurinath, was appointed. At the request of the various officers of state responsible for the revenue of the area, arrangements were also made for a piyal, or fresh enumeration of paiks and a reallocation of land. Three natives of rank, with the requisite establishment of muharrirs etc. were appointed to perform this duty, three thousand rupees being awarded to them for the completion of the task.³

In the administration of Lower Assam, however, it was thought expedient to keep more closely to the rules observed in the judicial and revenue departments in the older British possessions. This was essential because of the possibility that this part of the country might

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

2 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 51, Estimate of the actual demand of Revenue in Upper Assam for the year 1747 A.S. or 1825/26 E.S. Scott to Swinton, 18 May 1831.

3 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 31, Scott and Richards to government, 25 May 1825.

G. Borooah, History of Assam, p. 30, and also pp. 9, 13-15, 26, 28. Anandaram was the son of Haliram.

be retained by the British. It was facilitated, too, by the fact that the area had been long under Muslim rule* and its inhabitants did not differ so substantially from those of the neighbouring parts of British territory, previous to the introduction of the decennial settlement. Scott argued that the methods introduced by the Ahoms had been unproductive and were disliked by the people. He therefore transferred the Barphukan, who had been ruling Kamrup as the viceroy of the Ahom raja, assigning him to a judicial post in Upper Assam, and allotting him a monthly salary of three hundred rupees¹ as compensation for the loss of the large emoluments of his viceregal office. The revenue establishment of Lower Assam Scott then placed under a native sarishtadar. Since Duaria Barua⁺ family had been particularly helpful ever since his arrival in Assam, Scott appointed one of their members, named Haliram, who was given the title of Dhekial Phukan by the raja, to this new office.²

* During the period of their rule (1612-1627) the Mughals remained in Kamrup like an army of occupation, the basis of their rule being essentially military. Collection of revenue, suppression of local insurrections and the conduct of khedah operations seem to have been the main aims of Mughal government. Kamrup was made a Bengal subah and not a sarkar by itself. The parganas became the real governmental units. See S.N. Bhattacharyya, A History of Mughal North-East Frontier Policy, pp. 163-168.

1 See infra, p. 189 n²

+ "The Duaria Barua or Baruas received the goods of the Assam merchants and exchanged them for Bengal products. They realised the duties on all exports and imports. The rates equitably fixed by the government of Assam underwent fluctuations at the hands of different Duaria Baruas".

2 See S.K. Bhuyan, Anglo-Assamese Relations, pp. 50-51; see also G. Borooah, The Life of Anandaram Dhekial Phukan (in Assamese) for the duties of the Duaria Baruas, pp. 13-15.

2 G. Borooah, The Life of Anandaram, p. 30, and also pp. 9, 13-15, 26, 28. Anandaram was the son of Haliram.

pleaded, In 1825-26, the Bengal year 1232, the jama was again increased to a total of Rs. 245,361, which was an increase of over sixty thousand rupees upon the previous year's demand.¹ Once again the demand proved

difficult to realise, and in February, 1827, Scott had to write to Swinton for permission to write off about ten thousand rupees as not recoverable, from parganas which had proved to have been much over assessed. In 1828 government approval was finally given to Scott's request.²

Though not all that Scott had asked for was granted, a provisional survey was conducted, under a Lieutenant Bedingfield, in 1825-1826. The measurement survey showed that there were some 329,735 puras, or about 1000,000 bighas of cultivable land in Lower Assam, of which 112,858 puras or 450,000 bighas were held under rent free grants or otherwise exempted from the payment of revenue.³

Though the survey did not reveal a larger area liable to taxation than had been previously known, it proved impossible to enhance the demand to any but a very minor degree. The fact was that Scott had been very anxious to collect the maximum revenue possible, as so required. In mid 1825 therefore, Scott proposed that a proper survey of the area should be undertaken. A considerable number of native surveyors had already been taught the use of the compass, and Scott now asked government for the services of a Mr. Mathews, lately employed on the Cachar frontier, and of a native draughtsman to direct a scientific revenue survey. The establishment for which he sought sanction was to consist of ten native surveyors, one draughtsman, one Bengali muharrir and an writer of English, at a cost of not more than six hundred rupees a month. Such were the number of interesting subjects of enquiry, Scott

1 B.S.P.C. 20 Jan. 1826, nos. 23-24, Scott to Swinton, 14 Dec. 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 23 Feb. 1827, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 13 Feb. 1827;

2 B.S.P.C. 8 Feb. 1828, no. 34, Swinton to Scott, 8 Feb. 1828;

B.S.P.C. 28 May 1830, no. 92, Scott to Swinton, 6 May, 1830.

3 B.S.P.C. 28 Dec. 1827, no. 42, Scott to Swinton, 2 Dec. 1827;

B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 5, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828.

4 B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 19, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827;

BS.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 5, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828.

pleaded, that a scientific survey¹ on the lines originally planned by the surveyor-general of India was surely needed. He estimated that it would take the team some fifteen months.²

1) Though not all that Scott had asked for was granted, a provisional survey was conducted, under a Lieutenant Bedingfield, in 1825-1826. The measurement survey showed that there were some 529,735 puras, or about 1600,000 bighas of cultivable land in Lower Assam, of which 112,858 puras or 480,000 bighas were held under rent free grants or otherwise exempted from the payment of revenue.³

Though the survey did not reveal a larger area liable to taxation than had been previously known, it proved impossible to enhance the demand to any but a very minor degree. The fact was that Scott had been very anxious to collect the maximum revenue possible, so as to cover military costs and so convince the Supreme Government of the desirability of annexing Lower Assam permanently. He had therefore levied taxes on every source which had ever been taxed by the Ahoms or Mughals, and though he had intended to make the British assessment a light one, so making allowance for the difficulties which the people had undergone in the transitional period, he had in practice taken all, or more than the country could afford. The collection for 1233 (1826-27) at 2,90,457 Naryani rupees was therefore greater only by 42,774 rupees than the previous year.⁴

1 See *supra*, p. 106

2 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1825.

3 B.S.P.C. 28 Dec. 1827, no. 48, Scott to Swinton, 2 Dec. 1827;
B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 5, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828.

4 B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 19, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827;
B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 5, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828.

Moreover, recognizing a degree of over assessment in the past, Scott agreed to certain deductions upon the gross produce being made in the settlement of 1826-27. These were:

- 1) Five percent upon the cultivated portion to provide for mistakes or deficiency of assets from the flight of ryots.
- 2) From seven to ten percent according to the extent of the parganas for the expense of the mufassal collection, including the pay of the patwaris, gomasthas and other mufassal revenue and police officers.
- 3) Ten percent on the remaining assets for the malguzars (which in some few cases, principally of the hill chiefs, was increased to fifteen and twenty percent) where local circumstances and the lightness of the assessment under the former government appeared to render such indulgence necessary.¹

Scott felt it necessary to explain to government why such indulgences were necessary, and to excuse the smallness of the revenue secured from so large an area of cultivation. He therefore pointed out that under the Ahom government the pargana rate had been as low as from Rs 1 - 8 annas to less than 4 annas per pura or four bighas of the very best quality land. Inferior soils had either been exempted from taxation thereto. The loss to the sattras of revenues devoted to the invocation altogether, or had been assessed at one third of the rates for good of deities and provision for the mahants or supervisors of such monasteries, had much influence amongst the people and, therefore, he fines levied on the paiks, and other irregular cesses. Even so the new rates still averaged less than three annas per Bengal bigha or twelve

¹ B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827.

annas per pura. Furthermore, Scott, in surveying the sources of revenue, had to indicate that some were likely to disappear.¹

One source of revenue which he wished to discontinue was provided by the receipts from the Kandahar chowky, at the frontier between Lower Assam and Bengal. The duties from this custom post had yielded only Rs. 14,324 in 1825-26, and not only did they offer little hope of increase, but they had obviously become anomalous once Lower Assam was occupied by the British, for since Warren Hastings' day internal measures which he hoped would attract any revenue, it was obvious that however, according to the standards of Bengal, Scott's assessment rate. The second resource which he wished to relinquish was the tax on certain rent free lands, which he had introduced in 1825. The total yield from these lands had been 26,465 Narayani rupees, of which 2,533 rupees had been collected from the paiks and lands attached to the Hindu temples, and 2,032 rupees from dharmottar lands, granted to certain monasteries or satras. It was these two small items which Scott now wished, for social and political reasons, to give up. The curtailment of temple rites occasioned by the former tax had caused very general regret among a population whose superstitions invariably led them to ascribe sickness, drought and other accidents of the seasons thereto. The loss to the satras of revenues devoted to the invocation of deities and provision for the mohants or supervisors of such monasteries, had much influence amongst the people and, therefore, he

2 Ibid.
3 B.S.P.C. 18 Apr. 1828, pp. 2-3, Scott to Swinton, 27 March 1828; of deities and provision for the mohants or supervisors of such

* The history of the paik tax is worth noting. "In 1834, when monasteries, had much influence amongst the people and, therefore, he

1 B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827.

2 B.S.P.C. 16 Aug. 1828, Scott to Swinton, 15 July 1828.

ferred to the government. It was, however, pointed out that there was no reason to believe that Mr. Scott intended to give up any of the lands claimed to be held rent free which he brought under his immediate assessment, and if he did, he could not have done so without the sanction of government previously obtained." W.E. Ward, op.cit., p. 69.

thought that it would be both popular and desirable to sacrifice of the tax.¹

The remaining portion of the collection for the present year amounting to 21,899 rupees was derived from the nankar and brahmottar lands, the extent of which was unusually great in Assam. Scott reported that he had no wish to show leniency in taxing these.²

Scott had explained why the revenue yield was low. He set out measures which he hoped would arrest any further decline. It was obvious that however low ^{they were} according to the standards of Bengal, Scott's assessment rates in Assam represented a high figure in comparison with Ahom demands, and the increase had been sudden. He had therefore assumed the discretionary power to remit the interest nominally claimed upon arrears of revenue - an action approved by government - and he proposed that a reduction of five percent be allowed upon the revenue due, to all who paid in good time.³ He also set out ways in which he hoped it might be raised. He did not wish, for example, to forgo all revenue from the lakhiraj lands. He therefore turned to the Ahom government's practice of levying a tax called barangani* from rent-free lands whenever the

1 B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827.

2 Ibid.

3 B.S.P.C. 18 Apr. 1828, nos. 3-4, Scott to Sterling, 27 March 1828; Sterling to Scott, 18 Apr. 1828.

* The history of the barangani tax is worth noting. "In 1834, when Capt. Jenkins had become Commissioner, the Lakhiraidars' objected to pay this tax on the ground that Mr. Scott had only imposed it temporarily and had promised to remit it. The question having been referred to the government of India, the government replied that there was 'no reason to believe that Mr. Scott intended to give up any of the lands claimed to be held rent free which he brought under his immediate assessment, and if he did, he could not have done so without the sanction of government previously obtained'." W.E. Ward, op.cit., p. 69.

expenses of the state exceeded its ordinary receipts. The holders of such property, therefore, Scott proposed, might be called upon to continue their share towards the support of the army and other establishments maintained by the British government in Assam. Since, however, there seemed to be a general expectation that this source of revenue would ultimately be relinquished Scott thought it might be advisable to follow a middle course. Without entirely exempting the holders of rent-free lands from the payments of tax, Scott proposed to reduce the amount of the assessment somewhat and to appropriate the entire sum realised to purposes of obvious public utility, such as the education of youth and construction of roads, bridges and bunds.¹

Scott also sought new heads of taxation and methods of developing the country so as to increase its tax paying capacity. One measure Scott proposed was a tax of twenty rupees per pura upon opium poppy cultivation. The opium produced in Assam was entirely consumed in the country and the number of the inhabitants who used the drug was vast. Scott therefore conceived that a serious mortality would result from putting an entire stop to the cultivation, or from introducing material reduction was made in the retail price of the opium. For that reason he proposed his moderate tax on cultivation. Scott estimated that throughout the country the cultivation of poppy might extend to two thousand puras of land, which were not separately assessed, and that the net yield of the tax might be estimated at Rs. 25,000.²

1 B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827.

2 Ibid. B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827.

2) As another measure for ultimately augmenting the revenue, while meanwhile promoting the convenience of the public and facility in trade, Scott proposed the withdrawal of the Narayani currency from circulation and the substitution of the Company's Sicca rupees. The measure would result in an initial loss to the government of 150,000 Sicca rupees, but he pointed out that if the existing revenue was thereafter made payable in Sicca rupees, instead of in Narayani, an annual profit of about 50,000 Sicca rupees would be derived after the end of the second year.¹

Finally Scott sought to broaden the tax base and to secure an influx of much needed capital by a generous policy of grants of waste lands. The grant of waste lands or khats at a nominal revenue had been a normal way of remunerating high officers during the Ahoms' rule. Scott now, in September 1827, put forward plans which he hoped would increase the cash revenues^{and} provide^{for} the want of capital in Assam. He proposed that waste lands be granted to anyone who would engage to bring waste land under cultivation and to pay revenue under the following conditions.

1) That the grantee bring one fourth of his allocation into cultivation by the expiration of the third year; and additional fourth on the expiration of the sixth year; another fourth on the expiration of the ninth year; after which period the grantee should be entitled to hold the land in perpetuity on paying the pargana rates upon $\frac{1}{4}$ of the whole.

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Oct. 1827, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 Sept. 1827.

2 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 4, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1827.
1 B.S.P.C. 9 March 1827, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 28 Feb. 1827.

- 2) That the tenure created should be liable to be transferred by sale or otherwise, subject to the conditions of the grant, and that where the revenue ultimately assessable amounted to fifty rupees or more or the holder voluntarily agreed to make it up to that sum, he should be entitled to pay it direct into the public treasury, (and thus assume the status of a zamindar).
- 3) That applicants for lands on the above terms should be required to deposit or give security for the first two years revenue, to be forfeited to government and the land resumed if the terms were not complied with on the expiration of the fourth year, after which period the land-holding should be liable to sale for arrears of revenue in the usual manner.¹

What is of interest to note is that though Scott did not live to put these plans into action, his proposals were implemented not long after his death by the large scale grant of waste land on such terms.

In February, 1828, Scott was able to assure the government that in no case would the gross revenue derivable from Lower Assam in future, be less than Rs. 300,000 - the sum produced at the moment under the provisional system - and that rather it would considerably increase under a regular system, with money more abundant and the inhabitants more accustomed to the fiscal arrangements of the Mughal British type.²

¹ B.S.P.C. 25 Apr. 1828, no. 52, Sterling to Scott, 25 Apr. 1828. Thus reassured as to the revenue possibilities of Lower Assam, and that they would cover the costs of a regular British administration, the

¹ B.S.P.C. 5 Oct. 1827, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 12 Sept. 1827.

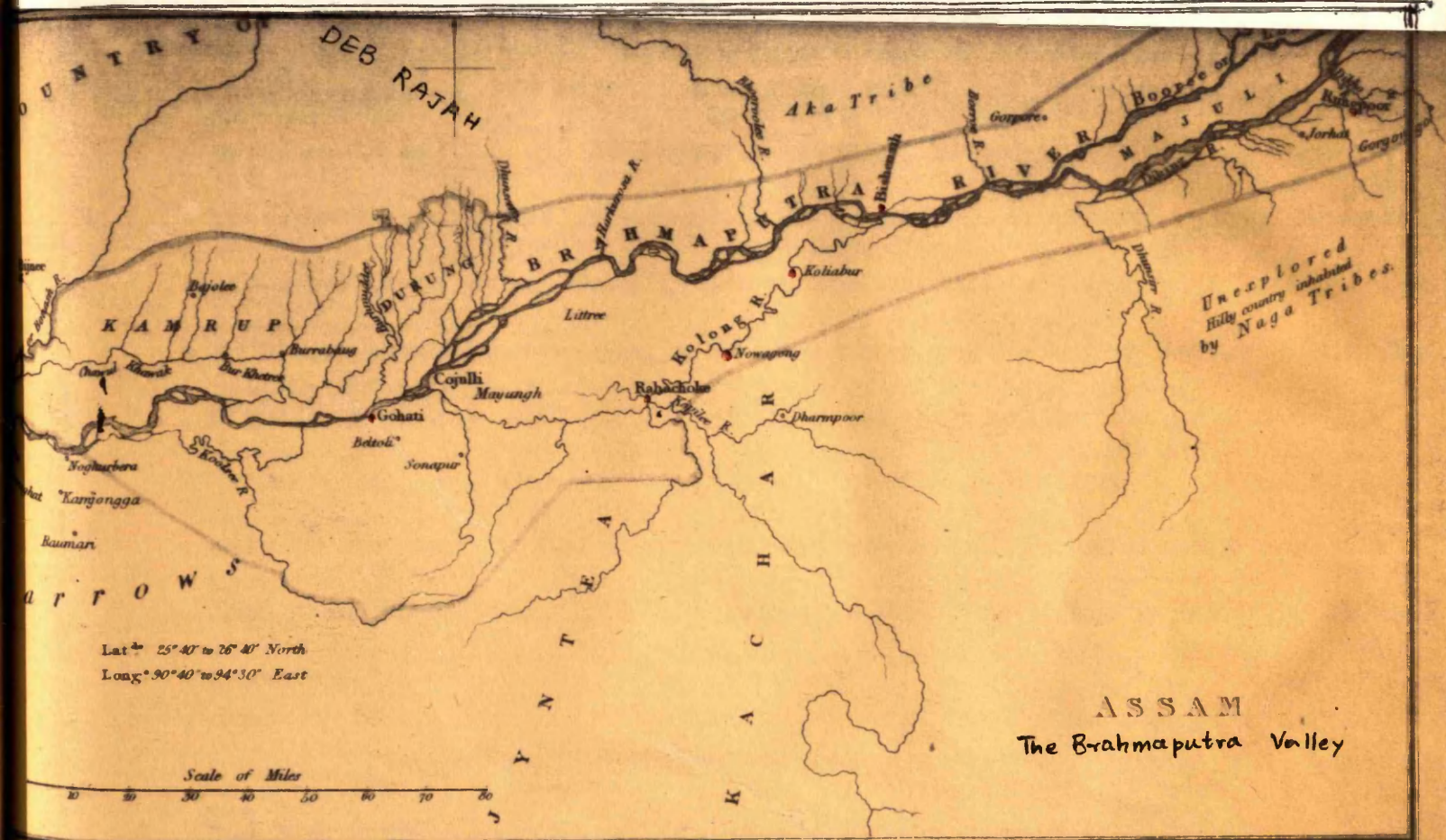
² B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 4, Scott to Swinton, 2 Feb. 1828.

Supreme Government finally decided, in that same month, upon the permanent annexation of Lower Assam. In April, the government approved Scott's plan for a full regular survey and review of the former revenue measurements.¹ These two decisions inaugurated a new era in the revenue history of Assam, for henceforward ad-hoc and temporary collections were gradually reduced into a regular system of revenue administration. Scott, however, could only pave the way for this new stage of development, for he did not live to supervise the full implementation of his measures in Lower Assam.

1 B.S.P.C. 25 Apr. 1828, no. 52, Sterling to Scott, 25 Apr. 1828.

CHAPTER V

(II)

Administration of Justice and Police.Published by W. H. Allen, 8, C. Londonhall Street, Aug. 1st 1836.

J. & C. Walker, So.

when a British expeditionary Army was installed and martial law was proclaimed, naturally saw a great increase in crimes of every description. In January, 1825, Scott reported that dacoity particularly had become a regular nightly occupation. Some robberies had also become five times as numerous in some parts of Lower Assam as they had been in most

- 1 S.K. Bhuyan, Anglo-Assamese Relations 1771-1826, p. 568.
- 2 Capt. Welsh's Report on Assam 1794. Incorporated in A. Mackenzie's North-East Frontier of India, appendix A, p. 378.

CHAPTER V

(II)

parts of Bengal two years earlier. Scott reported that an opinion had gained ground among the public that such crimes were treated very lightly by the British government and that a short imprisonment and a few stripes with a rattan were considered sufficient for an offence.

Administration of Justice and Police.

which the native authorities had only been able to keep down by the frequent infliction of mutilation and capital punishment. Scott

During the days of the Ahoms civil and criminal disputes were decided in mels - the Assamese equivalent of panchayats. They were presided over by the chaudhuries or by the heads of the khels. Important cases in Lower Assam were tried at the Barphukan's court at Gauhati and

In the very beginning Scott lacked the means and authority to in upper Assam at the king's court in the capital. The Barbarua was the remedy this evil. Though the evident need led him, early in 1824 to highest judicial officer in the Ahom kingdom and he was helped by issue a proclamation declaring the authority of the British government Brahman pundits. Capital punishment involving shedding of blood could only be ordered by the king¹, but the powers of the ministers was such British troops, and though he warned all the inhabitants of the strict that they could authorise a criminal's death by other means such as by punishment that would be inflicted on offenders, his judicial jurisdiction² drowning.

The years of conflict between the Ahoms, Singphos and Burmese, he was competent even to take cognizance of the more serious descriptions and the uncertain days after the suppression of the Ahom administration, of crimes. In response to his enquiries Scott was informed in May 1824 when a British occupation army was installed and martial law was proclaimed, naturally saw a great increase in crimes of every description. In January, 1825, Scott reported that dacoity particularly had become a regular nightly occurrence. Gang robberies had also become five times as numerous in some parganas of Lower Assam as they had been in most

1 S.K. Bhuyan, Anglo-Assamese Relations 1771-1826, p. 568.

2 Capt. Welsh's Report on Assam 1794. Incorporated in A. Mackenzie's North-East Frontier of Bengal, appendix A, p. 378.

parts of Bengal twenty years earlier. Scott reported that an opinion had gained ground among the public that such crimes were treated very lightly by the British government and that a short imprisonment and a few stripes with a rattan were considered sufficient for an offence which the native authorities had only been able to keep down by the frequent infliction of mutilation and capital punishment. Scott commented that "the consequence of this hitherto uncontradicted error has been the establishment of a system of violence and plunder attended by outrages of the most revolting kind".¹

In the very beginning Scott lacked the means and authority to remedy this evil. Though the evident need led him, early in 1824 to issue a proclamation declaring the authority of the British government duly established in the country as far as it was then occupied by British troops, and though he warned all the inhabitants of the strict punishment that would be inflicted on offenders, his judicial jurisdiction, at this time, was not properly defined. He did not know whether he was competent even to take cognizance of the more serious descriptions of crimes.² In response to his enquiries Scott was informed in May 1824, that until the Burmese were effectually excluded from all further interference with Assam, whether by negotiations or by arms, the country would be considered enemy territory merely occupied by the British army. This meant that it was not subject to the ordinary rules of civil and

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 14, Scott to Swinton, 7 Jan. 1825.

2 B.S.P.C. 28 May 1824, no. 19, Scott to Swinton, 12 May 1814.

3 Ibid.

criminal justice as administered in other settled British territories, and that Scott's presence in Assam as the supreme civil authority, would not affect Brigadier McMorine's administration of martial law.¹ In October, 1824, however, Scott was vested with police power. His immediate exercise of this power resulted in the prosecution of twelve persons in seven cases of dacoity, two of which were attended with murder, of twelve persons in two cases of murder, and of three persons in one case of burglary and theft attended with wounding.² With such evidence of violent lawlessness before him, and Assamese comments on the reasons for its prevalence, Scott urged the government to more vigorous action. "I would beg to submit the expediency" he wrote, "of such rules being laid down as may insure some consistency of practice and dispel the baneful illusion to which the past laxity of our administration and the ill-understood character of our government have unhappily given rise."³

In April 1825, after the whole of Assam had been occupied by the British forces and the Burmese expelled, it became necessary to devise some temporary judicial, police as well as revenue administration pending a final decision as to the fate of Assam. At this time Lt. Col. Richards was furnished with a warrant to organize a tribunal capable of passing sentences of capital punishment in cases of heinous crimes. The government also authorised Scott - who was now Senior Commissioner -

1 B.S.P.C. 28 May 1824, no. 20, Swinton to Scott, 28 May 1824.

2 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 14, Scott to Swinton, 7 Jan. 1825.

3 Ibid.

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 15, Swinton to Scott, 5 Apr. 1825.

to receive complaints and take cognizance of offences in the first instance as well as to award punishment not exceeding five stripes, hard labour, and imprisonment with or without transportation for life, in conformity with the general spirit of the Bengal Regulations. But it was specifically declared that his sentences should not extend to capital punishment.¹ It was thus made clear that the emergency powers requested by Scott were not considered necessary and that the appointment of commissioners signified that the administration was to be assimilated, in spirit, if not in detail, to that of Bengal. In May, 1825, therefore, Scott and his junior commissioner Lt. Col. Richards submitted joint proposals for the regular judicial administration of Assam.

For Lower Assam Scott had similar plans. In the development of the judicial system in Upper Assam Lombodar Barphukan, a man of talents, character and considerable wealth, the brother-in-law of Raja Chandra Kanta, was to be employed as their co-adjutor in judicial matters. For the decision of civil suits, it was proposed to constitute standing committees composed of officials and of the state pundits who had always been in attendance upon the supreme authority and who were now little employed. Criminal cases of minor importance were to be decided either by the junior commissioner in person or by reference to the Barphukan. Where the crimes were of greater magnitude the trials were to be held before juries, with the Barphukan as the president and the junior commissioner as superintendent of the court. The decision as to the guilt or innocence of the parties was to be left to the jury, while the choice of

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Apr. 1825, no. 15, Swinton to Scott, 5 Apr. 1825.

1 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1825, no. 31, Scott and Richards joint letter to Govt., 25 May 1825.

punishment would be made by the superintending commissioner. In order to preserve consistency in the commissioners proceedings, it was decided that they would be guided in fixing penalties by the laws in force in other British territories. They would also follow Bengal precedent in all cases in which a judge of circuit would be required to refer his proceedings to the Nizamat Adalat. It was also decided that if sitting separately, the commissioners would refer their proceedings one to the other. As a temporary safeguard, until the ability of Assamese jurors had been proved, the two commissioners reserved to themselves the right to reverse verdicts, where they were unanimous in wishing to do so.¹

For Lower Assam Scott had similar plans. In the development of the judicial system in Lower Assam especially, the impact of his ideas and of his energy is visible. The outcome was the creation of courts composed of three members as judges, of two pundits and six assessors, native courts not only for criminal but also for civil justice, an experiment of particular interest.

Nothing was done immediately by government to establish such courts either for criminal or civil purposes. On 30 December, 1826, Scott reported the serious inconvenience experienced through the want of tribunals competent to take cognizance of capital offences. The he attributed to the abolition of capital punishment. He also reported, setting up of a court martial at Gauhati was impossible with the troops with alarm, that since the arrival of the British some 226 prisoners had died in jail in 1825 and a further 221 in 1826, despite the fact trial of criminals in what would often be complicated cases. About seventy persons already had been committed for capital crimes and some of them had been nearly two years in jail without trial. Many of those

1 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 31, Scott and Richards joint letter to Govt., 25 May 1825.

so committed, Scott regretted, had died in confinement.¹ Because of this Scott suggested that either the authority of the Nizamat Adalat, be extended to Lower Assam or that a temporary court be constituted to deal with capital offences. Such a court should be composed of natives who had held high judicial office under their own government. There were several persons in Lower Assam, he reported, who were well qualified for such a trust. He himself could not devote sufficient time to civil suits and such a court, Scott considered, would be helpful in giving urgently required decisions in civil cases also. Besides disestablishment of native courts indispensable. Scott therefore without patching judicial business to the satisfaction of the natives, Scott waiting for the government's approval, established three native civil felt that it would be politically desirable. It would make some provisions at Gauhati, following his earlier plan. One of these was to exercise the powers vested in a munsif in the Bengal province, another state, some of whom were already in financial distress. Scott therefore was to exercise the powers vested in a sadr amin for the purpose of proposed that in conformity with Ahom practice the court should be original suits and deciding appeals from the munsif and a third, with composed of three members as judges, of two pundits and six assessors, similar powers to the sadr, was to decide in criminal cases of minor at a total monthly expense of seven hundred sicca rupees.²

Nothing was done immediately by government to establish such courts either for criminal or civil purposes. On 30 December, 1826, Scott reported a progressive increase in crime in Lower Assam, which he attributed to the abolition of capital punishment. He also reported, with alarm, that since the arrival of the British some 226 prisoners had died in jail in 1825 and a further 221 in 1826, despite the fact that there had never been more than four hundred persons in confinement

1 B.S.P.C. 16 Feb. 1827, Scott to Swinton, 30 Dec. 1826.
2 B.S.P.C. 7 July 1826, no. 25, Scott to Swinton, 2 March 1826.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid.

4 Ibid.

necessary, this would operate advantageously by placing a check on the chief judge and by speeding business. He proposed that one should be permanently employed in each court in conducting the details of miscellaneous business, while the other two, with the judge, would form a court for the decision of suits.

The composition of and the monthly expenditure on these courts was as follows :

<u>Court No. 1</u>	A rajkhowa*	-	60 rupees
	Three assessors	-	102 "
	Establishment and contingencies	-	72 "
			<hr/> 234 rupees
<u>Court No. 2</u>	A barphukan*	-	150 rupees
	Three assessors	-	102 "
	Establishment and contingencies	-	72 "
			<hr/> 324 rupees
<u>Court No. 3</u>	A barphukan	-	150 rupees
	Three assessors	-	102 "
	Establishment and contingencies	-	72 "
			<hr/> 324 rupees
	A Bengal muharrir		
	Two sarishtadars for preparing monthly reports	-	72 "
	A nazir and peons	-	25 "
			<hr/>
		Total	979 Ny rupees or 616 sicca rupees.

* The barphukans and rajkhowas were ordinarily governors of particular territories and heads of the levies raised from their jurisdictions. Like feudal lords, they joined the war with their respective contingents. They also administered justice in their allotted districts. See S.K. Bhuyan, Anglo-Assamese Relations, p. 10.

Scott reported that the salaries of the native judges were somewhat less than had been paid to the munsifs and sadramins in his jurisdiction in Rangpur. But the expense of the establishments of muharir etc. was greater than usual on account of the difficulty of obtaining natives of the country trained in court procedure.¹

Scott had great hope of these courts. The jurisdiction of these courts extended to suits under five hundred rupees, and Scott mentioned that considering the number of such suits in Assam, and the great division of landed property, these three courts would not be more than sufficient. But he was sure that they would render enormous service to the land where almost a total interruption of regular administration of justice had taken place during and after the Burmese invasion.²

In March, 1828, Scott was able to inform the government of the success of the native courts for civil suits established in 1826: such a success as might reasonably be expected considering the previous official habits of the country and "the extreme difficulty or rather impossibility of substituting all at once a system of purity for one of gross corruption". Scott submitted the statistics of appeal from original decrees as evidence of the satisfactory working of the courts:

1 B.S.P.C. 11, 29 March 1828.	Courts	Decrees in original suits	Appeals
2 Ibid.			
3 See p. 54	No. 1	142	16
4 B.S.P.C. 16 Feb. 1827, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 30 Dec. 1826.	2	167	15 To the Commissioner
	3	447	19 To Court No. 1

1 B.S.P.C. 16 Feb. 1827, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 30 Dec. 1826.

2 Ibid.

Of sixteen appeals from No. 1 Court decided by Scott nine decrees had been confirmed, five amended and only two reversed.¹ The key to this success was not only that the business was in the main conducted by person of the greatest ability but also that the presence and frequent opposition of colleagues had formed a considerable check upon malpractices. Judging from the tenor of their decision Scott commented that their orders, generally speaking, had been correct in essential and agreeable to the customs of the country.²

The bringing of Kaliabar, Nowgong and Charduar under British revenue administration in 1826³ enlarged the field for the administration of justice also. Scott, therefore, found it necessary to establish panchayats in addition to the above native courts. Their members, chosen by the local inhabitants, did not receive any salary but agreeably to former custom they were allowed a certain number of attendants from amongst the paiks and some other trifling immunities involving altogether an expense or loss of revenue to government of about fifty five rupees per month.⁴ In the older Bengal territories the judicial reform of 1793 had introduced 'native commissioners' such as the amin or referee; salis or arbitrator; and munsif or native judge to hear and decide on commission in the first instance, suits for money or personal

1 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 11, Scott to Sterling, 29 March 1828.

2 Ibid. 1834, p. 249.

3 B.S.P.C. 16 Feb. 1827, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 30 Dec. 1826.

4 See *supra*, p. 156.
B.S.P.C. 16 Feb. 1827, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 30 Dec. 1826, minutes by Sir Thomas Munro on appointment of 'Native Judges', 5 Apr. 1827.

4 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 11, Scott to Sterling, 29 March 1828.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1834, no. 11, Scott to Sterling, 29 March 1834.

property not exceeding in amount or value a sum of fifty sicca rupees.¹ The need of some such courts was felt for this extended territory of lower Assam, but as the decision about the establishment of a higher order of courts in Assam was still pending, Scott found it more convenient to take the help of the existing panchayat system for trifling cases than to appoint arbitrators. He said that this system of administering justice was not without its inconveniences, but upon the whole in the existing state of society in Assam, it seemed preferable to the introduction of munsifs.² The authorisation of such panchayats to hear and determine certain suits was however, in line with that new pattern of augmented Indian agency in the administration of civil justice which had been brought about by Munro in Madras and Elphinstone in Bombay in the second decade on the nineteenth century.³

Scott had at first planned to employ native courts in connection with the trial of capital offences. But when such courts were formed, he found government reluctant to entrust such authority to them. Nor was government prepared to extend the authority of the Nizamat Adalat to Assam. Later in 1826, therefore, Scott wrote to Swinton suggesting that capital cases might be referred to his newly formed civil courts at Gauhati.⁴

1 See B.B. Misra, The Central Administration of the East India Company 1773-1834, p. 249.

2 B.S.P.C. 16 Feb. 1827, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 30 Dec. 1826.

3 See B.B. Misra, op.cit., pp. 269-270; Bentinck Papers, PwJf 2455, minutes by Sir Thomas Munro on appointment of Native Judges, 6 Apr. 1827.

4 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 11, Scott to Sterling, 29 March 1828.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 11, Scott to Sterling, 29 March 1828.

Fifteen months later, in March, 1828, Scott wrote to Sterling, Swinton's successor as the secretary to the Political Department, asking why the government was still hesitating about giving the native courts jurisdiction over capital offences. The native civil courts seemed to him to be quite competent to use such powers. With an argument, strikingly resembling that of Macaulay¹ in a later period, Scott pointed out that in his experience it was generally easier to come to a decision in cases of murder than in less serious cases, in which the parties might have stronger reasons for attempting to conceal the truth.²

Scott, however, made it clear that he considered the extension of the jurisdiction of the Nizamat Adalat to Lower Assam the best solution. It was only until this could be done, that he was proposing to make use of the native civil courts. The latter were undoubtedly preferable, he said, to the less satisfactory tribunal of the native court martial which had not met in Western Assam for nearly four years. It had been so idle, he commented bitterly, at a time when "the frequency of murder and offences of the most heinous description loudly called for a vigorous execution of the law by good and unobjectionable means, if available but by any means rather than not at all". Scott

1 In questioning "the necessity for having four classes of judges to try four classes of causes", graded according to a pecuniary scale, Macaulay said "the largeness of the sum at stake has no more connexion with the difficulty of trying the cause than the largeness of the sum at stake on a game at cards has to do with the chances of the game ... it is generally much less difficult to get at the truth respecting them [those involving large sums] than respecting claims arising out of petty contracts or wrongs". C.D. Dharkar, Lord Macaulay's Legislative Minutes. Minute No. 16; 25 June 1935, pp. 103 and 205-6.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 11, Scott to Sterling, 29 March 1828.

summed up the immediate inconveniences and the future advantages in extending the jurisdiction of the Nizamat Adalat to Assam thus : "As the case now stands there would no doubt be some temporary inconvenience in bringing the pending trials before the Nizamat Adawlut, both on account of their number which has now accumulated to thirty four, and because the whole of the voluminous papers must be translated into the Persian language by persons who will in many cases labour under the additional difficulty of having to translate from the Assamese original through a Bengalee version. These objections do not however appear to me to be sufficient weight to justify in this particular instance, so wide a deviation from the ordinary course of law as that contemplated".¹ He recommended, therefore, that those parts of Regulation X of 1822 that related to the administration of criminal justice should be extended to Lower Assam.²

Scott's letter of 29 March crossed with a letter of 7 March from government, but although his latest arguments for the use of native judges were thus not heard, his earlier correspondence had evidently convinced the government of the necessity of such a step. The acting governor general at this time was Butterworth Bayley³, who throughout his Indian career had been known for his liberal views, views which dominated the judicial reforms of William Bentinck.⁴ Under his influence the government in 1828, had already come to believe that "the ad-

1 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 11, Scott to Swinton, 29 March 1828.

2 Ibid.

3 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 8, Swinton to Scott, 7 March 1828.

4 William Butterworth Bayley was interim Governor-General in 1827-28.

4 B.B. Misra, op.cit., p. 83.

ministration of Civil Justice will be promoted and improved by enlarging the powers at present exercised by the native judicial officers".¹ The Government however thought that in augmenting the powers of the native functionaries, a gradual extension would be a better procedure than any "violent innovation on the established system which might suddenly elevate the native judge to the possession to the full extent of jurisdiction which before had only been entrusted to European officers".²

It was a government already moving in Scott's direction which now agreed to Scott's plan to use the native civil courts at Gauhati for the trial of capital offences, but with the following 'essential' provision : that the sentences of the native courts should be submitted for Scott's revision and sanction.³ Before determining however, whether the jurisdiction of the Nizamat Adalat should be extended to Western Assam, under Regulation X, 1822, the government desired to give a full and fair trial to Scott's own plan which they considered "novel and interesting".⁴ In May, 1828, the government came to a more downright decision, announcing that, after the fullest consideration the governor-general-in-council had concluded that in the present state of the country, it would be premature and inexpedient to introduce the authority of the Nizamat Adalat into Lower Assam under provisions analogous to those of Regulation X, 1822. An efficient system for the dispensa-

1 Bentinck papers, PwJf 2736, memorandum on changes in the administration of civil justice.

2 Ibid.

3 B.S.P.C. 7 March 1828, no. 8, Swinton to Scott, 7 March 1828.

4 Ibid. It would be competent to Scott to cause his own sentences to be

tion of criminal justice in Assam, generally, would be best provided for by using to the full those tribunals and institutions which Scott had "very judiciously revived and put in action, subject to the central revision and superintendence of the British officers vested with the administration of the province." The government believed that there was nothing in Scott's plan essentially at variance with the course pursued in other lately conquered territories. The government reminded Scott that neither Arakan, the Tenasserim provinces nor the older possessions of Delhi and the Narbadda territory were subject to the jurisdiction of ^{the} Nizam Adalat.¹

The basic provisions of the plan were, first, that Scott's assistant, Capt. White, should apprehend and commit offenders, and exercise generally the authority and function of a magistrate; secondly that all criminals so apprehended should be tried by the native courts created by Scott; thirdly, that these courts should give their verdict as to innocence or guilt of the parties accused, and should award punishment not involving imprisonment beyond three years and with the right of appeal to Scott; fourthly, in cases of graver and more heinous criminality, the proceedings should be transmitted to Scott together with the opinion and finding of the court. Scott was empowered to pass sentence of death for the crimes of murder and of robbery attended with murder. It was also decided that in determining the quality of offences and the punishment to be awarded, Scott should be guided by the spirit and principles of the regulations in force within the Company's territories. It would be competent to Scott to cause his own sentences to be

1 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 13, Sterling to Scott, 2 May 1828.

carried into execution, without previous reference to government, but he was to submit periodical returns and statements of all trials held and judgements passed under the above orders.¹

The hope was expressed that this plan would take care of the heavy arrears of criminal cases, and prevent such arrears in the future. Meanwhile, where prisoners had long been awaiting trial, government urged that capital punishment should only be inflicted where crimes had been particularly atrocious.²

The government, however, was less sanguine than Scott about the native courts' effectiveness, and stressed the necessity for therefore suggested that to guard against erroneous or corrupt verdicts European control over the native criminal courts. White, Scott's assistant in Lower Assam, was even less convinced of Assamese ability, of the magistrate the latter should be empowered to refer doubtful honesty and reliability, though he cloaked the downrightness of his cases to the circuit judge. Should the circuit judge agree with the distrust, in part, by stressing administrative difficulties. Referring magistrate the grounds of their opinion should be explained to the to "the demoralised state of society in Lower Assam" he declared his members of the native court, who should be called upon to revise their conviction that "improvement would not be effected without very rigid proceedings. If they failed to do so or refused to alter their opinion control on the part of the magistrate superintending the trials". Under then their verdict should be set aside, and that of the circuit judge the new arrangements five or six individuals would be called upon to carried into effect.² decide upon the criminality of an action. Division of opinion would lead to lengthy discussion and exposition of their different views, and delay would be further aggravated since a European superintending the trial would have still other sentiments and habits of thought.³

1 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 13, Sterling to Scott.

2 Ibid. 25 July 1828, nos. 2-3, White to Scott, 5 June 1828.

3 B.S.P.C. 25 July 1828, nos. 2-3, White to Scott, 5 June 1828.

That was inevitable, but he admitted that no better solution offered for the time being. He strongly recommended, however, the appointment of additional European officers - and with power to check and control the members of the native courts so that their erroneous or corrupt verdicts might not defeat the ends of justice. Then, with the voice of Cornwallis, White went on to consider the Assamese character : "In point of morality", he said, "I should regard it as inferior to that of the inhabitants of the Upper and Lower provinces of the Bengal territory, nor in my opinion has the moral feeling of what is due to justice been cultivated in an equal degree".¹ White therefore suggested that to guard against erroneous or corrupt verdicts by members of native courts, in cases coming within the jurisdiction of the magistrate the latter should be empowered to refer doubtful cases to the circuit judge. Should the circuit judge agree with the magistrate the grounds of their opinion should be explained to the members of the native court, who should be called upon to revise their proceedings. If they failed to do so or refused to alter their opinion then their verdict should be set aside, and that of the circuit judge carried into effect.²

In June, 1828, Scott, while supporting Capt. White's proposal of employing more European officers in judicial affairs, forwarded his final plan. He recommended that for the present the officiating magistrate should exercise the usual powers and that the commissioner

1 B.S.P.C. 25 July 1828, nos. 2-3, White to Scott, 5 June 1828.

2 B.S.P.C. 25 July 1828, nos. 2-3, White to Scott, 5 June 1828.

should try commitments as heretofore, both officers being authorized to call for the assistance of the native courts in any trial, as might seem desirable. Scott proposed that capital cases should be tried before the Commissioner and a native court of three or five members and should the commissioner concur in the verdict of the majority of assessors the commissioner should pass the sentence prescribed by the Regulation. But the government's hesitation and White's evident distrust of the character of Assamese men of rank led Scott to reconsider the procedure for revising decisions. His own doubt was lest the gap between a court composed of nobles and members of religious orders and those members of the lower classes using the courts might not lead to the return of biased verdicts, contrary to evidence. To safeguard against abuse, Scott proposed that where the commissioner disagreed with a verdict of guilt by the panchayat he should be authorized to ignore it and to discharge the prisoner at once. When, on the other hand it was an improper verdict of acquittal that was given, then, where the case warranted, it should be referred in the way prescribed by the Nizam-at Adalat when there were differences of opinion between the judge of circuit and his law officers. Scott's idea was that the native court's knowledge of the existence of such a power of revision would, to a great extent render its exercise unnecessary. Scott also agreed with Capt. White that it would be a further improvement if a somewhat more popular character were given to the jury by the admission of some qualified persons, not members of the civil courts.¹

¹ B.S.P.C. 25 July 1828, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 25 June 1828.
² Lomhodar Barphukan was empowered to give punishment up to a fine of fifty rupees, or imprisonment for six months, or both, or to give fifty likehows and a monthly salary of three hundred rupees. Kashinath Phukan, Assam Buranil Puthi (in Assamese), p. 52.

The establishment of native courts for both civil and criminal justice in Lower Assam was, for Scott, a killing of many birds with one stone. Besides forcing the British government to accept certain direct responsibilities, the measure also partially solved the problem of providing native employment.

The immediate necessity for securing a system of courts had been the growing increase of cases in both civil and criminal departments and Scott's inability to attend to all of them personally. During 1827 two hundred and forty-eight criminal trials, of the description cognizable by a court of circuit, had been brought before Scott in Lower Assam. He considered it would be impossible for him to find time for a careful revision of the criminal trials from Upper Assam, if all in which a sentence of more than 3 years was called for were referred for his orders - unless of course, another assistant were appointed.¹ The same reason compelled Scott to delegate greater power to the political agent in Upper Assam when a thought was given also towards the administration of justice in that part of Assam. For Upper Assam, since the number of criminal trials was not so great, Scott recommended that the political agent should decide or refer to the Barphukan² all cases cognizable by a magistrate in Bengal. He should also try more serious offences with a panchayat, and if he concurred with their verdict, pass the sentence prescribed by the Regulation, up to seven years imprisonment and thirty nine stripes. Trials in which he might differ from the

1 B.S.P.C. 25 July 1828, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 25 June 1828.

2 Lombodar Barphukan was empowered to give punishment up to a fine of fifty rupees, thirty stripes, or six months imprisonment. He was given fifty likchows and a monthly salary of three hundred rupees. Kashinath Phukan, Assam Buranji Puthi (in Assamese), p. 52.

panchayat he should refer to the Commissioner who would be guided by the rules in force for the reference of cases of a judge or circuit to the Nizam Adalat. He would also be invested with the same general powers of revision and control as were exercised by the Nizam Adalat. In trials of offences of greater magnitude the political agent should submit his proceedings with the findings and opinion of the court to the Commissioner who would then pass sentence as in cases referred to the Nizam Adalat.¹

Police

In British India it was not until after the annexation of Sind in 1843 that Sir Charles Napier undertook the first measures for "the organization of a regular police force" as a "separate self-contained organization".² Elsewhere the Mughal system of zamindari responsibility for police was adopted as the basic system. Like other British territories in India throughout Scott's period of administration the management of police in Assam was left in the hands of the rajas, chaudhuries and considerable malguzars who were primarily revenue officers. Only where in any particular pargana there was a marked increase in crime, or an evident failure on the part of the person charged with police control to discover and apprehend criminals, did government interfere. Then Scott's practice was to depute police officers to the pargana to strengthen the local police - the cost of their establishment

1 B.S.P.C. 25 July 1828, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 25 June 1828.

2 Ram Gopal, British Rule In India, p. 142.

3 Ibid, p. 19.

4 Ibid.

being recovered by an additional cess levied on that district. Vigilant and capable malguzars rendering particular help were praised and officially honoured.¹

One danger was that police authority might be abused. Scott hoped that as the malguzars, or native collectors of revenue, were in most cases men elected by the ryots, they would be unlikely to render themselves unpopular by abusing their police powers.² As a precaution against police corruption, Scott introduced several novel processes.

One was to use certain police functionaries as agents provocateurs, encouraging them to accept and report bribes. If those who offered bribes or those who took them without reporting the fact were convicted, the informer received the whole or part of the bribe passed.³ Adam

White - Scott's judicial assistant in Lower Assam claimed that though the plan failed to extirpate bribery completely, the system made every-access possible. White gives the following description: "His Kutcherry one exceedingly cautious either in giving or receiving bribes."⁴ Against corruption amongst the superior amlas, Scott employed a rigorous system it impossible for persons of an ordinary strength of constitution to of espionage, of which Capt. White gives us a vivid description: In have transacted business at all. The most unlimited freedom of petitioning was allowed, without expense to the complainants. A large box devoted to him, who reported the peccadilloes of their brethren. These men had literally sold themselves to him, having being guilty of delinquencies themselves and having compounded their penalty by the promise of giving information. Scott thereby collected information on

1 On 30 December Scott recommended Government to present Raja Vijayanarayan of Darrang with a khelat worth five hundred rupees for keeping the Bhutia robbers in check.

2 B.S.P.C. 16 Feb. 1827, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 30 Dec. 1826.

3 A. White: Memoir, p. 18.

4 Ibid, p. 19.

4 Ibid.

on suspected individuals and when proof was complete he used to pounce upon them. Capt. White described the result thus : "Undoubtedly these informers played false at times, where large sums were at stake; but it was necessary to do something and occasionally valuable information was given, which operated as a general check".¹

remarks upon the amlas and European authorities.¹ But, though this was so, Scott's stand against levying taxes on institution of suits - an influence of Benthamite ideas² - was not without its benefits. White

Scott stressed three important features of his administration himself writes that "good was mingled with evil - various murders, and of justice and police in Assam : the free communication between the other offences, were brought to light; the rogueries of the amlah were governors and governed; the employment of natives; and the blending of often exposed; a free vent was afforded to the spirit of grumbling, the British with the native system, so as to attain the best of both in inherent in our nature; and above all, the most complete check was a non-regulation system.

imposed upon his European subordinates, as the slightest complaint against them was listened to, and referred to these functionaries for an answer". There was no wonder that people crowded round a kutcherry was at all times crowded, indeed to a degree which would have rendered it impossible for persons of an ordinary strength of constitution to have transacted business at all. The most unlimited freedom of petitioning was allowed, without expense to the complainants. A large box was placed in the kutcherry, into which the petitions could be thrown. To ensure despatch of business they were limited to 25 or 30 lines, but no stamp tax or other restriction existed. All proceedings were written in the Bengali or Assamese language.²

G. Borooah: Life of Anandaram, pp. 30-31; see also

1 A. White: Memoir, p. 19. (in Assamese), p.

2 Ibid, p. 17.

3 White has perhaps given this example from his own experience for it is said that he was once reprimanded by Scott for his misbehaviour towards Haliram Dhakial Thukan.³ then revenue sarishtadar of Lower district of Baramahal in 1795 - see P. Woodruff, Men who ruled India, vol. I, p. 186.

The facility of petitioning was much abused at times, and by White reports that people complained about very petty and trifling matters. Sometimes, he says, even unfounded accusations of the most serious nature were given against individuals, while disappointed suitors often gave vent to their malice in most offensive anonymous remarks upon the amlas and European authorities.¹ But, though this was so, Scott's stand against levying taxes on institution of suits - an influence of Benthamite ideas² - was not without its benefits. White himself writes that "good was mingled with evil - various murders, and other offences, were brought to light; the rogueries of the amlah were often exposed; a free vent was afforded to the spirit of grumbling, inherent in our nature; and above all, the most complete check was imposed upon his European subordinates, as the slightest complaint against them was listened to³, and referred to these functionaries for an answer".⁴ There was no wonder that people crowded round a ruler who showed an eagerness to listen to them, after a long period of misrule. Here was the paternalist tradition at its best in action - as it had earlier been seen in Munro's tent in the Baramahal in 1795⁵, or was to be seen in Henry Lawrence's in the Punjab at a still later date,

1 A. White, Memoir, p. 17.

2 See C.D. Dhakar, op.cit., p. 206; Minute of 25 June 1835, no. 16.

3 White has perhaps given this example from his own experience for it is said that he was once reprimanded by Scott for his misbehaviour towards Haliram Dhakial Phukan the then revenue sarishtadar of Lower Assam -

1 G. Borooah; Life of Anandaram, pp. 30-31; see also Indibar Barua, Jivanadarsa (in Assamese), p.

4 A. White, Memoir, p. 17.

5 Munro while settling the revenue affairs in the ceded south Indian district of Baramahal in 1795 - see P. Woodruff, Men who ruled India, vol. I, p. 186.

when each in turn sought to set right a countryside lately ravaged by war and misrule. The real way to prevent unjust suits or frivolous and vexatious actions was, for Scott, as Macaulay would have put it : "to take care that there shall be just decisions".¹

But it was Scott's persistent effort to employ the local people in the administrative system which was perhaps the most distinctive feature of his judicial administration. He sought to employ Assamese not only so as to keep the disaffected nobles in good humour, essential though that was, but also from a belief that many of them were really very capable. Unlike Capt. White he never generalised about the moral failings of the Assamese nobles of the transitional period. On the contrary he praised their great ability and competency to administer not only civil but also criminal justice. In fact only a few days prior to his death Scott wrote to a friend, a correspondent of the Bengal Hurkara, that "on the liberal and extensive employment of the natives depended the result, whether the judicial system could or could not be rendered efficient ...".² Capt. White recorded Scott's views on the natives thus : "Mr. Scott entertained a high opinion of the intellectual capacity of the natives. About a year before his death, he recommended that a native should be appointed as assistant to the European officer in charge of Lower Assam, with full powers of a European mufassal magistrate in criminal cases viz. of passing sentence of two

1 C.D. Dharkar, op.cit., p. 116.

2 Appendix 39, White's Memoir, pp. 127-30, "N.S." in the Bengal Hurkara and Chronicle, 15 September 1831.

years imprisonment".¹ The most advantageous mode of employing natives on criminal trials was found by Scott in making them jurymen superintended by the commissioner as judge.²

DAVID SCOTT AND THE KHASI HILLS

The first British contact with the Khasis took place after the acquisition of the district of Sylhet by the East India Company by the grant of the district to Bengal in 1763.³ The Khasis thereby became the Company's neighbours to the north while to the south-west the state of Jaintia, which bordered with Tripura, was also ruled by a chief of Khasi lineage. The Khasis possessed quarries which could supply lime for the roads of Sylhet district, and were not averse from trade.⁴ In the great bazaar of Dibrugarh, on the Sylhet border, they traded in silk, iron, wax, etc. and employed many Bengalis to keep their accounts. All these business transactions, however, did not offer any opportunity either to the British government or to the inhabitants of Dibrugarh to know much about the Khasis of the interior hills. The Khasis, as a whole, were known to the British as troublesome marauders, whose raids were a terror to the inhabitants of the plains.⁵

1 Sir Charles Hall in J. F. Hall, *The Khasis*, p. XIV.

2 This chief's name was not recorded, but he was situated in the plain between the Surma River and the hills.

3 B.S.P.C. 2 May 1828, no. 11, Scott to Swinton, 29 March 1828, postscript.

4 Letter to William Carey by a Commissioner from Sylhet 11 May, 1813, M.C.L.R.N., vol. VI, 1813, pp. 17-8.

5 Their ravages between 1770 and 1780 were mentioned as specially severe. *Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam*, p. 86.

CHAPTER VI

DAVID SCOTT AND THE KHASI HILLS

The first British contact with the Khasis took place after the acquisition of the district of Sylhet by the East India Company by the grant of the Diwani in Bengal in 1765.¹ The Khasis thereby became the Company's neighbours to the north; while to the north-east the state of Jaintia, which marched with Sylhet, was also ruled by a chief of Khasi lineage.² The Khasis possessed quarries which could supply lime for the whole of deltaic Bengal, and were not averse from trade.³ The relation thus between the Bengali inhabitants of the British territory and the Khasis were far from friendly, and it was not easy for the British to learn much about the interior. The earliest British account of the Khasis was perhaps, that of Robert Lindsay who traded in the grand mart at Pandua, on the Sylhet border, they traded in silk, iron, wax, honey and ivory and employed many Bengalis to keep their accounts.⁴ All these business transactions, however, did not offer any opportunity either to the British government or to the individual to make a large fortune by working the Khasis lime quarries. He described the inhabitants of Bengal to know much about the Khasis of the interior hills as "a fair man in his dealings, and, provided you treat him honourably, he will act with perfect reciprocity towards you". He, The Khasis, as a whole, were known to the British as troublesome marauders, whose raids were a terror to the inhabitants of the plains.⁵

1 Sir Charles Lyall in P.R.T. Gurdon's The Khasis, p. XIV.

2 This chief's capital Jaintiapur, was situated in the plain between the Surma river and the hills.

3 P.R.T. Gurdon, op.cit., pp. XIV-XV.

4 Letter to William Carey by a missionary from Sylhet 11 May, 1813, M.C.L.R.M., vol. VI, 1813, pp. 107-8.

5 Their ravages between 1780 and 1790 were mentioned as specially severe. Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, p. 86.

4 Ibid, pp. 177-8.

The reason behind the occasional incursions by the Khasis into the plains of Sylhet, was, however, not far to seek. The advance of the British in Bengal compelled the Khasis to retire to their native fastnesses and to leave the town of Sylhet, the villages of Pandua, Chhatak and many others which were once their possessions, in the hands of their powerful neighbour.¹ The Khasis were also annoyed with the fraud and deceit of the Bengali traders, especially of those whom they employed as accountants. Eventually, they were driven to exasperation, and started carrying some of them off to their hills, where their victims were threatened with starvation if they refused to refund the embezzled money.²

The relation thus between the Bengali inhabitants of the British territory and the Khasis were far from friendly, and it was not easy for the British to learn much about the interior. The earliest British account of the Khasis was perhaps, that of Robert Lindsay³ who had been the Resident and Collector of Sylhet about 1778, and had made a large fortune by working the Khasis lime quarries. He described the Khasi as "a fair man in his dealings, and, provided you treat him honourably, he will act with perfect reciprocity towards you". He, however, cautioned the foreigners : "but beware of shewing him the smallest appearance of indignity, for he is jealous in the extreme, cruel and vindictive in his resentments".⁴ In the second decade of the

1 A.B. Lish, A brief account of the Khasis, C.C.O., March 1838, pp. 129-143.

2 M.C.L.R.M., vol. VI, 1813, pp. 107-108

3 See Lord Lindsay, Lives of the Lindsays, or A Memoir of the Houses of Crawford and Balcarres, vol. III, pp. 163, 176-8.

4 Ibid, pp. 177-8. 1824, no. 10, Scott to Swinton, 24 March 1824.

nineteenth century, the missionaries of the Serampore Mission began to take an interest in the Khasis. Their account agrees entirely with that given by Lindsay some thirty years previously. In May 1813, a missionary from the Sylhet station wrote to Carey thus : "The real Khasis possess two great characteristic virtues, viz., truth and honesty. They spurn the little meannesses practised by the Bengalees, whom they despise. They are however very revengeful, and seldom forget injuries".¹ However, there was no significant progress in the missionary activities in the Khasi hills until Scott opened up the hills.² Dr. Buchanan Hamilton, who in the early part of the nineteenth century, had been touring on a botanising excursion in the north and on the north-eastern border of Bengal³ attempted to give some information about the Khasis. The account which he wrote about the Khasis, while staying at Goalpara in the Brahmaputra Valley, was ^{however} thoroughly inadequate and in many cases Buchanan confused the Khasis with the Garos.

The importance of a friendly relationship with the Khasis was thus for the first time realised by David Scott at the time of the Burmese war, when the need to establish a dak or postal service across the hills from Sylhet to Assam was urgently felt. From Pandua, a border village in the Sylhet district, Scott contacted the Khyrim raja⁴ who at

1 M.C.L.R.M., vol. VI 1813, p. 107, A missionary's letter to Carey, Sylhet, 11 May, 1813.

2 The first missionary station in the Khasi hills was opened at Cherrapunji by the Serampore Mission in 1832 with A. Lish in charge of the station. Periodical Accounts of the Serampore Mission, 1832, pp. 30-33.

3 M.C.L.R.M., vol. II, 1809, p. 22, W. Robinson to William Carey, 11 April, 1809.

4 This chief's territory was situated to the west of Jaintia and it extended from Pandua to Assam.

3 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 10, Scott to Swinton, 24 March 1824.

the time was master of the foothills from which the road was to start. The raja exhibited much less jealousy than Scott had expected and in March 1824 he agreed to Scott's proposal to establish a road across his country from Assam to the plains of Sylhet on being paid for it. He also undertook to improve the road at his expense provided a small lowland estate was restored to him by the British.¹ The land desired

The route which Scott proposed to open from Sylhet began with by the raja was not considered of much value and Scott therefore advised the conclusion of the bargain.²

Cherrapunji*, known as Dewan Raja. His territory, two days march in

Besides gaining a passage for the dak, and later on for troops, length and one in width was mostly tableland, 3 to 6,000 feet above sea level. The natural beauty and splendid climate of the place moved Scott so much that he early pressed his idea of exchanging a portion of the Khasi chiefs into frequent and intimate communication with the British; the grant of land in the plains would render the hill chiefs more dependent and obedient; and the cool, salubrious climate of the hills could be profitably used by the Company for cantonments or sanatoria.³ Scott was very impressed with the climate of the Khasi

estate near Pandua. The chief was very desirous of possessing this land hills and his very first journey to them though "rather fatiguing was on the whole a pleasant trip". Indeed the march proved a voyage of discovery. He found that within six hours journey of Pandua there was a climate probably superior to that of the Cape of Good Hope in point

of coldness, and healthiness; the mountains were full of green short grass and the elevation was upwards of five thousand feet. The local

* Cherrapunji, celebrated as the place which has the greatest measured people informed him also that "throughout the months of December and

1 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 16, Scott's private letter to Swinton, 21 March 1824.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 16, Scott's private letter to Swinton, 21 March 1824.

3 Ibid. B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 16, Scott to Swinton, 24 March 1824.

January the running streams are fringed with ice; that snow frequently falls; and that it is necessary every morning to break the ice in the water pots standing in the house". "It is a great pity", Scott wrote to the government, "that the Cassya country is not better known, and that we do not avail ourselves of the obvious advantages it offers".¹

The route which Scott proposed to open from Sylhet began with a rugged ascent through territory belonging to the petty chief of Cherrapunji*, known as Dewan Raja. His territory, two days march in length and one in width was mostly tableland, 5 to 6,000 feet above sea level. The natural beauty and splendid climate of the place moved Scott so much that he early pressed his idea of exchanging "a portion of the bold and sterile⁺ highlands for a slice of the fertile plain below".² He proposed to improve the road to Assam by Cherrapunji at the government's expense, and to conciliate and secure British influence over the chief by conferring upon him in zamindari tenure a small estate near Pandua. The chief was very desirous of possessing this land which Scott understood might be purchased for a very trifling sum. The remainder of the road he planned lay through the territories of Myllem chiefs, formerly dependent upon Khyrim but who had lately separated themselves from that petty state.³

1 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, nos. 16 and 10, Scott to Swinton, 21 and 24 March 1824.

* Cherrapunji, celebrated as the place which has the greatest measured rainfall on the globe, long remained a popular station, and the discovery of coal there attracted to it many visitors.

+ Scott explained later on that he was wrong in calling it sterile.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 16, Scott's private letter to Swinton, 21 March 1824.

3 B.S.P.C. 2 Apr. 1824, no. 10, Scott to Swinton, 24 March 1824.

hills, Scott, however, could not secure engagements with the chiefs quickly enough to use the road on his march towards Assam with the 23rd Native Infantry.¹ Since a cordial understanding already subsisted with the raja of Jaintia², the route through the latter's territory was considered more practicable. Moreover to ensure the steady advancement of his future plans in the hills Scott was cautious enough to avoid any sudden measures that might create distrust or jealousy on the part of the hill people.³

More than two years later when the war with the Burmese was over, Scott resumed his plan. On 30 November, 1826, the opportunity came to him to extract a major concession from another powerful Khasi chief - the raja of Nongkhlaio.⁴ It was a disputed succession which gave Scott his chance. Since June and July 1824 when the route to Assam via Jaintia ceased to be available after the reoccupation of the country about Nowgong and Raha chowky by the Burmese, Scott had been trying to open a route via Pandua and Barduar.⁵ But though Chattar Singh, the Nongkhlaio raja, who held the lowlands of Barduar was ready to agree to this, his relative Tirut Singh, whose power lay in the

1 See supra, p. 86

2 The following was the "separate article" of the treaty concluded between the Company and Raja Ram Singh of Jaintia on March 10, 1824: "Raja Ram Singh engages, that to assist in the war commenced in Assam between the Honourable Company's Troops and those of the King of Ava, he will march a force and attack the enemy to the east of Gowhatty; and the Honourable Company agrees, upon the conquest of Assam, to confer upon the Rajah a part of that Territory proportionate to the extent of his exertions in the common cause."

1 C.U. Aitchison, Treaties Engagements and Sanads, vol. II, p. 165.

3 B.S.P.C. 25 June 1824, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 4 June 1824.

4 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1827, no. 20, Scott to Swinton, 30 Nov. 1826.

5 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1827, no. 20, Scott to Swinton, 13 Jan. 1827.

hills, contested Chattar Singh's authority over Barduar and prevented the use of the road. In 1826, however, on Chattar Singh's death, Scott announced that he would not grant the investiture of the Barduar to any person whose authority was not fully recognised in the hills as well as in the lowlands, and who was not prepared to grant the same facilities of communication through his territory as the Khasis enjoyed in British Assam and Sylhet. It was at this time, when the question of succession brought about continued disputes between the parties of Tirut and the successors of Chattar, that Scott was invited to mediate. Since Scott had also to discuss the settlement of revenue for certain lands which the raja held under the Assam government¹, he accepted the invitation. It was then unanimously agreed that the pretension of Rajjan Singh - a child of only five years - the brother and the direct heir of Chattar Singh should be set aside on the ground of minority and that Tirut Singh the next heir should be elected to the raj, to be succeeded at his death by Rajjan Singh.² In return for Scott's support for his claims, Raja Tirut Singh agreed to become a British protégé and to give a free passage for British troops through his territory. He also agreed to furnish materials for the construction of a road, against payment, and after its completion to keep it in repair. The raja agreed that in the event of the Honourable Company carrying on hostilities with any other power he would serve with all his followers as far as to the eastward of Kaliabar in Assam. The raja also promised

1 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1827, no. 20, Scott to Swinton, 13 Jan. 1827.

2 B.S.P.C. 26 June 1829, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 30 May 1829.

to rule his subjects according to the laws of his country, keeping them contented and to seize and deliver any criminal from British territory taking refuge in his country. In return the British government undertook to protect the raja's country from foreign enemies and to support him against any unjust act or violence of any neighbouring chief.¹

to be met Scott had achieved his object, but he had also ^{had} the chance to observe the toughness of the hill tribes and the distinctive character of their social organization. They had shown themselves very touchy about their independence, and the raja's assembly, customarily "a more genuine power" than the raja himself, as Scott observed, had been extremely reluctant to grant such favours to the English. Scott found that the meeting which he attended was conducted throughout "with a degree of independence, coolness and propriety which could not have been exceeded under similar circumstances by the inhabitants of the most civilized countries".² It was due to the strict vigilance of the sardars and people, and the latter's alarm at what they had heard of the seizure of bazars in Sylhet district to serve the British army in 1825, that the raja refused to bind himself to provide workmen for the road.³ He did undertake partially to make the road and to construct

1 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1827, no. 20, Articles of agreement with Tirut Singh, Scott to Swinton, 30 Nov. 1826;
C.U. Aitchison, op.cit., pp. 185-186.

2 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1827, no. 20, Scott to Swinton, 13 Jan. 1827;
A. White, Memoir, pp. 34-37. White attended this meeting along with Scott.

3 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1827, no. 20, Scott to Swinton, 13 Jan. 1827.

the bridges beyond Nongkhlaio as far as his territories extended towards Assam. Scott, realising the raja's difficult situation, urged the Calcutta Council to believe that the concession given by the raja was not an inadequate exchange for British protection.¹

The hopes of advantage through peaceful penetration into the Khasi hills that Scott had cherished in the early part of 1824 seemed to be more realisable after the treaty with Nongkhlaio. Scott reported in January, 1827, that by the establishment of British influence in the Khasi hills the petty chiefs, whose raids disturbed the Sylhet frontier, would be completely overawed and that since the remaining independent Khasi territory was split in two by the recently obtained portions of Nongkhlaio, the recurrence of hostilities and feuds between the different chiefs would be necessarily lessened. The improvement of the country itself was also an evident British interest since it would help to promote the prosperity of the districts of Sylhet and Assam, the produce of the hills being traded for the manufactures of the plains. Considering all these advantages Scott urged the government to approve his agreement with Tirut Singh and give consent to his immediate plan of building a few bungalow at Nongkhlaio.² The government was pleased to approve Scott's measures, although it commented that the settlement would have been more satisfactory if Tirut had contributed more efficiently to the completion of the road.³ Tirut was honoured with a

1 B.S.P.C. 13 Sept. 1827, no. 16, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1827.

2 Ibid.

3 B.S.P.C. 2 March 1827, no. 22, Swinton to Scott, 2 March 1827.

B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 11, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1828.

3 Ibid.

state palankeen - called kekuradola - the gift which used to be given to persons of superior rank during the Ahom reign.¹

Despite this seemingly auspicious start, Scott's plans did not go smoothly, troubles coming one after another. Soon after the Nongkhlaio agreement he found himself involved in the "intriguing tactics" of the hill chiefs. What Scott was pleased to call "intriguing tactics" was really the assertion of claims by the Khasi chiefs over foot-hill villages on the Assam side of the hills. These claims were disputed by the British appointed malguzars of Lower Assam. One typical case was the claim by the chiefs of Myllem and Khyrim over certain parts of Dimarua², including all the lowlands up to the river Kallang in Kamrup district. Their claim was resisted by the sazawal who was collecting the revenues for the British government, and the chiefs therefore, in August 1828, sent a body of their dependants to stop the sazawal's collection, to levy contributions of grain from the villages and to carry off to the hills those inhabitants who opposed them.³

Scott's response to such attacks upon British revenues and British subjects was to send a party of Rungpore Light Infantry and Goalpara sibandi sepoy to expel the Khasi gangs from Dimarua district. Messengers were also sent to Barmanik, the chief of Myllem warning him

1 B.S.P.C. 13 Sept. 1827, no. 16, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1827.

2 Scott reported that about thirty years previous to the present dispute, in the same district of Dimarua a pretender to the chieftaincy of Dimarua had been introduced by the Khasis who had been finally expelled by the Assamese after a few weeks, and that since then the latter had been enjoying quiet possession of the land. We do not know what was the Khasi version of the story.

B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 11, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1828.

3 Ibid.

of the consequences of his conduct and requiring him to withdraw his people and state his claims through the proper channels. Scott was secretly informed that this chief of Myllem had also sent messengers to the neighbouring hill rajas requiring their assistance in case of major strife against the British.¹

Although Scott had witnessed the political skill and expertise of the Khasis in their tribal assemblies, and had found many of them friendly disposed, he had the lowest opinion of the hill tribes' behaviour towards the plains dwellers. All the hill tribes, he held, were equally cruel and barbarous. Referring to the past history of Assam Scott mentioned that under the Assam government revolutions of single company would be quite sufficient to bring him to reason. If the present nature had been common occurrence in the estates bordering on the hills and murders, the putting out of eyes, and other cruelties were ordinarily practised with impunity upon each other by the petty contending factions. The ruling power had seldom possessed sufficient means to vindicate its authority by penetrating into the hills and securing the persons^{guilty} of such offences. The long continuance of this state of things had naturally generated a spirit of intrigue in local officials and chiefs which could not be at once eradicated and which still induced them to look to the old means of regaining their situations when dismissed, by endeavouring to displace the raja and secure the favour of his successor.²

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1828.

2 Ibid.

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1828.

2 B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 12, Swinton to Scott, 5 Sept. 1828.

3 B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1828.

himself Scott was for bold action. Experience having so frequently shown the impolicy of allowing the border tribes to make any encroachment, since this merely led them to commit still more flagrant misdeeds, he recommended a formal demand upon the chief of Myllem for the amount collected by his people from the pargana of Dimarua. If that failed, Scott suggested that it should be followed up by a closure of the markets, and if that too should fail, by the march of a party of troops to his principal village which was situated one long day's journey south of Nongkhlaio. The country of Myllem chief being quite open and the inhabitants numbering only four to six hundred fighting men with no better arms than bows and arrows, Scott thought that a single company would be quite sufficient to bring him to reason. If need be he proposed to call upon the raja of Jaintia and Nongkhlaio to furnish their contingents in support in accordance with the treaties they had entered into with the British government.¹ The Government believing in his judgement and discretion, on account of his "long experience of the ways and habits of the border tribes", authorised him to carry out his measures.²

1) The raja would receive as much land in the plains near Pandua as Scott obviously minimised the power of the Khasis and treated the incident of Dimarua as an outcome of the natural evil propensities of "savages".³ No sort of organized rebellion was ever expected from the Khasis, and the existing trouble was considered as merely local. In the remaining few months of the year 1828 therefore, Scott busied

1 B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1828.

2 B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 24, Swinton to Scott, 5 Sept. 1828.

3 B.S.P.C. 5 Sept. 1828, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 8 Aug. 1828.

himself advising his assistants on the various administrative problems which had cropped up in the newly annexed territory of Assam. Capt. Neufville gave him information about the assembly of a body of insurgent ex-nobility in Upper Assam¹ and in the autumn of 1828 Capt. White of the troubles given by the Bhutias in the Buriguma duar.² In April 1829, after supervising the construction of buildings at Nongkhla³, Scott went in person to Cherrapunji, to make arrangements with Raja Dewan Singh about the grant of land in his territory for the road⁴, and to supervise its construction by prisoners from Assam.⁵ It was while at Cherrapunji that on 7 April the news came of the massacre at Nongkhla³ of two Europeans, Lt. Bedingfield and Lt. Burlton, along with several natives, killed by the Khasis.⁶

1 B.S.P.C. 4 Dec. 1828, no. 10, Neufville to Scott, 22 Oct. 1828.

2 B.S.P.C. 4 Dec. 1828, no. 12, White to Scott, 28 Oct. 1828.

3 On 24 March 1829 Scott informed Calcutta that a bungalow consisting of six small and one large room, affording accommodation for two families or four bachelors, had been built at the cost of Sa.Rs. 3,923. He also reported that there was an adjoining house of an inferior description, which if necessary might be fitted up for the reception of an equal number of visitors. B.S.P.C. 18 Apr. 1829, nos. 55-56, Scott to Swinton, 24 March 1829.

4 The three points arrangement with the raja was thus:

- 1) The raja would receive as much land in the plains near Pandua as might be taken by government in the hills, and that he would be allowed to establish a bazar, which should be under his authority.
- 2) The raja would help in every direction towards the building of the road.
- 3) Natives of Bengal committing offences within the limits of the sanatorium, would be tried by British government; if beyond, by the raja, but severe punishment would be given only after consultation with the Agent of the governor-general.

B.S.P.C. 1 May 1829, no. 38, Scott to Swinton, 19 Apr. 1829.

5 B.S.P.C. 17 Oct. 1828, nos. 4-5, Scott to Swinton, 22 Sept. 1828.

6 B.S.P.C. 25 Apr. 1829, nos. 9-14, White to Swinton, 8 and 25 Apr. 1829.

Contemporary Englishmen in Assam described the massacre of Nongkhlaio as an incident arising from a stupid remark made by a Bengali chaprasi. In a dispute with the Khasis, prior to Scott's coming up, the man had threatened them with his master's vengeance and had plainly told them that it entered into his master's plans to subject them to taxation.¹ Scott certainly was at a loss to find any more serious reason behind the outbreak, which he declared was "not easy to comprehend"² since he thought Tirut was friendly to the British. However, he admitted that no sooner had he settled the difference between the parties of Chattar and Tirut than "fresh schism broke out", the inhabitants of one of the principal villages, called Lungbri, taking the part of Rajjan Singh, the minor brother and direct heir of Chattar Singh, and seceding altogether from Tirut's authority. The aggrieved party had also gone so far as to stop travellers on the road.³ Tirut had his own grievances too. Scott reported that on obtaining possession of the lowland estates granted in return for the site for^a road and sanatorium, Tirut found "his unreasonable expectations of enjoying a large profit and arbitrary sway over his ryots disappointed". Because of his complete ignorance of the British system of revenue collection, and "his obstinacy in refusing the assistance offered to him by an experienced agent", Tirut failed to raise sufficient money even to pay the government dues.⁴

1 A. White, Memoir, pp. 41-42; A.B. Lish, op.cit., p. 130.

2 B.S.P.C. 26 June 1829, nos. 2-3, Scott to Swinton, 30 May 1829.

3 Ibid. C. 26 June 1829, nos. 1-2, Scott to Swinton, 30 May 1829.

4 Ibid. B.S.P.C. 25 Apr. 1829, no. 9, White to Swinton, 8 Apr. 1829.

3 From Mahidhar Barooah's deposition it is clear that Tirut treated this Assamese officer with respect.

indignant Tirut's own version however, was very different. He complained that at the time of the agreement the understanding was given that he would not be asked for the revenue of the land given to him. But Scott argued that "although no regular annual rent in money was levied under the Assam government from his [Tirut's] predecessors, they were liable to perform service to the state with the whole of their paiks. They had, besides been invariably obliged to pay a fine to the Barphukan to obtain the investiture of the estate". The amount raised in former times under these heads had "exceeded the whole revenue at which duar was now assessed".¹

Whatever the truth of Scott's assertions the chief certainly felt that he had been deceived. He also felt betrayed in another incident. The raja of Rani, a border area in the Kamrup district of Lower Assam, who was in dispute with Tirut, had threatened to retaliate upon Nongkhlaio people passing through his territory to the markets in Assam. Tirut had thereupon turned to his new British ally for help - only to be told none would be given "unless he first made what reparation was in his power for the murders and robbery he had committed on the Rani people". Moreover, when Tirut decided to take matters into his own hands, and assembled a force apparently to attack the lowlands of Rani, he found that at the request of the Rani raja Captain White had sent a body of sepoy to keep the peace.² No wonder that to Mahidhar Barooah, an honoured prisoner³ captured along with Lt. Bedingfield, Tirut

1 B.S.P.C. 26 June 1829, nos. 1-2, Scott to Swinton, 30 May 1829.

2 Ibid; B.S.P.C. 25 Apr. 1829, no. 9, White to Swinton, 8 Apr. 1829.

3 From Mahidhar Barooah's deposition it is clear that Tirut treated this Assamese officer with respect.

indignantly exclaimed : "Boorooah Mr. Scott formerly made friendship with me saying 'your enemy is Company's enemy, and that he would re-linquinsh the Barduar revenue both in money and paiks. He has not done it and he has the wish to give troops to my enemy the Rani Raja to assist him against me'." ¹

Thus it is clear that Scott's plan to exchange portion of holds of such ring leaders as Barmanik, were burnt down completely. "the bold and sterile land in the hills for slices of fertile plain below" was most untactfully handled. The supposed bargain offered to the hill tribes proved not in the least advantageous to them, their Mirza Bandula, a party of the Sibandi corps and forty armed Bhayans, newfound ally deserted them in their hour of need, and rumour had it, intended to subjugate and tax them. While Scott was hearing of conspiracies by Myllem chief, White was informed that Tirut had engineered a large-scale plan to drive the English from Assam, and had invited the ex-raja, Chandra Kanta to co-operate in the enterprise. ²

British retaliation began immediately after the massacre of Nongkhlaio, Capt. White with forty sepoy^s of ^{the} Rungpore Light Infantry marched for the hills in the early morning of 7 April, 1829. A few days later Scott was planning to fix a strong military post at Nongkhlaio or

1 B.S.P.C. 26 June 1829, no. 3, Scott to Swinton, 30 May 1829.

2 Mahidhar Barooah's deposition taken on the 17 May, 1829, in the Fauzdari Adalat of Gauhati.

3 To counteract this design of Tirut White summoned Raja Chandra Kanta and others to Gauhati. White wrote that on their arrival he would suggest to the raja that "as a well wisher to the Company and to prevent his name being abused, it would be desirable for him to proceed to Goalpara".

4 B.S.P.C. 8 May 1829, nos. 9-10, White to Swinton, 14 Apr. 1829.

some other place to teach the "savages" "to feel that the British power, unlike the feeble and distracted government which preceded it in Assam, is both able and determined to maintain its authority and punish with promptitude those who offend against it".¹ He administered "retributive justice"² by capturing and destroying the Khasi villages one after another, at the same time seizing their grain.³ The strongholds of such ring leaders as Barmanik, were burnt down completely.⁴ A force of Garo mountaineers, chosen for their hardiness and ability to withstand the arduousness of a hill campaign were sent in under Mirza Bandula, a party of the Sibandi corps and forty armed Shyams, and a sum of one thousand rupees was offered for the capture of Tirut.⁵

The vigorous policy of reprisals, including the ruthless destruction of villages, ordered by Scott, received the approval of the Supreme Government. They commented that "whatever the original sources of Raja Tirut's enmity may have been, that attack was not provoked by any act of violence or oppression on the part of the unfortunate sufferers" - and they expressed the righteous hope that "the display of our ability to punish those who have ventured to offend against us to set our power at defiance will have awakened these rude and barbarous tribes to a proper sense of their own weakness and the danger they incur by provoking our just resentment".⁶

1 B.S.P.C. 25 Apr. 1829, no. 13, Scott to Swinton, 14 Apr. 1829.

2 B.S.P.C. 15 May 1829, no. 11, Swinton to Scott, 15 May 1829.

3 B.S.P.C. 1 May 1829, nos. 40-43, Scott to Swinton, 17 Apr. 1829;
B.S.P.C. 15 May 1829, no. 10, Capt. Lister to Scott, 26 Apr. 1829.

4 B.S.P.C. 26 June 1829, nos. 2-3, Scott to Swinton, 30 May 1829.

5 B.S.P.C. 5 June 1829, nos. 6-7, Scott to Swinton, 21 May 1829.

6 B.S.P.C. 15 May 1829, no. 9, Scott to Swinton, 27 Apr. 1829;
B.S.P.C. 26 June 1829, no. 4, Swinton to Scott, 26 June 1829.

The result of Scott's measures was speedy. In the beginning of May Capt. Lister with his detachment succeeded in subduing many villages including such strongholds as Lunggrin, Mairong and Nongkhlaio and Tirnt had to move from one hiding place to another.¹ By September many rebel leaders, including Barmanik of Myllem and Jabbar Singh of Ramri wished to come to terms², agreeing to pay to the government a fine of four thousand rupees and to cede the right of quarrying lime stone on any part of the course of the Bogapani river.³ By April 1830 a vast tract^{had been subdued}, stretching up the Assam valley, which included the whole of Myllem, and its dependencies of Ramri, Marriw and Nongkhlaio, except for a pocket lying between Nongkhlaio and Myllem.⁴ They had also occupied certain small areas on the southern or Bengal side of the mountains, Momlu, Lylanchu, Mosmy, Superpunji, and Byrong.⁵ For the administration of all these occupied parts of the Khasi hills Scott proposed that the former chiefs should be reinstalled, but under sanads granted by the government. The chiefs should be liable to punishment for treason or resistance to British authority and to removal in the case of continued opposition. In such an event the leading persons in the country would be required to assemble and elect new chiefs, subject to the approval of the British government. The restored chiefs were to

1 B.S.P.C. 22 May 1829, no. 1, Scott to Swinton, 5 May 1829.

2 B.S.P.C. 28 Aug. 1829, no. 21, Scott to Swinton, 14 Aug. 1829.

3 B.S.P.C. 18 Sept. 1829, no. 1, Scott to Swinton, 5 Sept. 1829.

4 These lands belonged to twelve different lyndows or confederated chiefs of Sohiong ect. who remained neutral during the last disturbances.

5 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 49, Scott to Swinton, 9 Apr. 1830.

5 B.P.C. 11 Feb. 1831, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 12 Jan. 1831.

be entrusted with the administration of justice for all but capital offences. These he proposed, might be tried before an assembly of chiefs to be held twice a year when he went to hold the circuit at Sylhet. He proposed that in the present state of the country they should not be subjugated to the payment of any revenue. Instead he proposed to impose upon them fines equivalent to the expense and trouble pursued in such cases, was that of reducing to subjugation the tribes they had occasioned, five thousand rupees from Barmanik, three thousand from Jabbar Singh and two thousand from the raja of Marriw. The Nongkhlaio district was restored to the minor Rajjan Singh upon the same terms. Finally some of the most elevated and fertile spots were set apart, under direct British control, for future use.¹ Scott's measures were whole heartedly supported by the government, the greatest reliance being put on his local knowledge and experience in regard to the character, disposition, habits and usages of the hill tribes.²

The complete subjugation of the refractory Khasis was achieved only in 1833³ when the long and harassing war was brought to a close. That, of course, was two years after David Scott's death. But Scott had succeeded during his life time, in bringing peace to almost all the hills.⁴ The outrages, murder and depredations which occurred in the last year of his career (1831) were restricted to the duars, such as Pantam, Bogy and Bongaon, where the Khasis were joined by the Garos.⁵

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 49, Scott to Swinton, 9 Apr. 1830.

2 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 50, Swinton to Scott, 7 May 1830.

3 P.R.T. Gurdon, op.cit., p. XVI; Physical and Political Geography, p. 87.

4 Bengal : Past and Present, vol. XI, 1829, p. 108.

5 B.P.C. 11 Feb. 1831, no. 27, Scott to Swinton, 12 Jan. 1831.

The cause of these late troubles was the strict control now exercised over the duars by the British, who thereby deprived the Khasis of the illicit emoluments they had been in the habit of levying under the Assam government in the form of ceremonial and other illegal cesses.¹

The only course which Scott thought could advantageously be pursued in such cases, was that of reducing to subjugation the tribes bordering on the duars who had been perpetrating the outrages and who were at present independent of British authority. Scott proposed the establishment amongst them of the same sort of internal government as had been maintained amongst the Garos of the North-East parts of Rungpur since 1817.² Scott was pretty certain that the duars would pay double the existing revenue, about a thousand rupees if they were secured against the aggression of the hill tribes. He therefore employed shyam musketeers, under the command of Ensign Brodie who succeeded by April 1831 in subduing the marauding tribes of the duars.³

1 B.P.C. 11 Feb. 1831, no. 28, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 17 Jan., 1831.

Under the Assam government the estates forming the duars had not paid any regular annual revenue but large sums were extracted on the occasion of a new chiefs' accession, raised by levies on the people, while the tribes were bound to furnish paiks for the public service. These labour demands were commuted to a money payment, a few working paiks only being retained for local purposes. But although the revenue was fixed at a very low rate and reductions made in favour of the chiefs in some cases amounting to nearly fifty percent upon the jama, few of them had been able to fulfil their engagements owing to their total incapacity for business and the roguery of their servants. Their failure led to the temporary attachment of several of their estates, a proceeding which ultimately led to catastrophe.

2 B.P.C. 11 Feb. 1831, no. 28, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 17 Jan., 1831.

3 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1831, no. 35, Scott to Swinton, 29 Apr. 1831 and Brodie's report, 6 Apr. 1831.

The reduction of the whole of the principal chiefs to the westward of Nongkhlaio was thus accomplished after a lightning three weeks campaign¹ and although the death of the man² who had struck them with such terror might tempt some of them to break their agreements, Scott was sure that in the main they had a sufficient lesson not to repeat the act.³ The successful conduct of the campaign by Brodie with a few irregulars convinced Scott of the suitability of his similar measures on the Sadiya frontier.⁴ He wrote to Swinton thus : "With a party of forty two men Ensign Brodie had in fact, nearly accomplished in three weeks, what several companies of Sepahees were unable to attempt in two

1 B.S.P.C. 20 May 1831, no. 36, Scott's private letter to Swinton, 29 Apr. 1831.

2 Brodie died in the last stages of this campaign. About his character, courage and determination Scott wrote thus: "... .. It is a grievous thing to lose such a noble spirited officer in such a way. But he may be truly said not to have died in vain, since he has clearly indicated the means that we should in future adopt in the petty warfare that may be expected occasionally to take place with the rude tribes encircling a frontier of one thousand and five hundred miles in extent

... .. I am inclined to count the high character, that he has established amongst our Cassya friends and foes of European courage, activity and perseverance, qualities which they are naturally led to value very highly and which when conjoined, as in the present instance, with a kind and conciliatory demeanour, would have given this young man a most powerful influence over their minds and rendered him a very efficient instrument for their ultimate reclamation. This loss could not indeed be adequately supplied were the whole Army picked for the purpose since they were united in him in an extraordinary degree of personal activity, a complete contempt for privation of every kind, and an enthusiasm in favour of the mountaineers and high esteem for the bright part of their character, that would have enabled him completely to win their hearts".

B.P.C. 20 May 1831, no. 36, Scott's private letter to Swinton, 29 Apr. 1831.

3 Ibid.

2 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 49, Scott to Swinton, 9 Apr. 1830.

~~See supra, p.~~

months; and it appears to me, that the successful result of this small expedition becomes of no trifling consequence, when it is considered that we have on this frontier a boundary line of about one thousand and five hundred miles in extent, the whole of which is subject to similar depredations to those that led to the late military operations in Assam, while owing to the unhealthiness of the climate and other local circumstances it may fairly be considered indefensible by means of our regular troops".¹

He expressed him, and he therefore hoped that he might also be able to canton a company of European troops there, though the land had been given on the understanding that it was for the reception of invalids.⁴

For this rather underhand move Scott gave two reasons - that

Use of the Khasi Hills : Plan of European military colonies.

The insurrection and rebellions could not suppress Scott's indomitable zeal for developing the Khasi hills. Indeed, he went beyond his original ideas for developing sanatoria for invalid European soldiers in the Khasi hills, to the grandiose imperial vision of planting European military colonies therein.

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 49, Scott to Swinton, 9 Apr. 1830.

When Scott had first drawn attention to the cool, healthy climate of the hills, he had thought of them as useful for sanatoria.

2 G.U. Aitchison, op.cit., p. 173.

3 Scott had special respect for Cherrapunji, as he was so grateful that he never visited Cherrapunji saved his life and he was so grateful that he never visited Cherrapunji.

but otherwise barren.² But by the beginning of 1830 they had been

-
- 1 B.P.C. 20 May 1831, no. 36, Scott's private letter to Swinton, 29 Apr. 1831.
- 2 B.P.C. 18 June 1830, no. 52, Scott to Swinton, 4 June 1830.
- 3 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 49, Scott to Swinton, 9 Apr. 1830.

found suitable for growing many European crops, and larger uses began to suggest themselves.¹ An agreement had already been reached with the Dewan Raja of Cherrapunji in September 1829 by which the raja agreed to cede a portion of his territory, east of Cherrapunji, for building houses by the Company² and meanwhile three houses were built there, capable of being converted, at little expense, into barracks for forty European invalids. The friendliness of the people of Cherrapunji³ had much impressed him, and he therefore hoped that he might also be able to canton a company of European troops there, though the land had been given on the understanding that it was for the reception of invalids.⁴

For this rather underhand move Scott gave two reasons - that by the presence of a European company "an impression would be made upon the mountaineers, in regard to further resistance, which could not perhaps be produced by any other means", and that "it would restore a more complete degree of subordination and discipline amongst the native troops on this frontier than has hitherto prevailed".⁵ In further explanation of the importance of the latter reason Scott cited the symptoms of disorder among the sepoys in Assam, displayed at various

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 49, Scott to Swinton, 9 Apr. 1830.

2 C.U. Aitchison, op.cit., p. 172.

3 Scott had special respect for the people of Cherra. The Khasis of Cherrapunji saved his life and he was so grateful that he never violated the compact then arrived at that "the independence of the Khasis of Cherra should always be respected".

G. Bertrand, Secret Lands Where Women Reign, p. 157.

4 B.P.C. 18 June 1830, no. 52, Scott to Swinton, 4 June 1830.

5 B.S.P.C. 16 Apr. 1830, no. 34, Scott to Swinton, 12 March 1830.

2 B.S.P.C. 16 Apr. 1830, no. 34, Scott to Swinton, 12 March 1830.

3 B.P.C. 18 June 1830, no. 52, Swinton's note, 15 June 1830.

4 B.P.C. 25 June 1830, no. 48, Scott to Swinton, 11 June 1830.

times in the last few years. The conduct of the 46th Regiment at Rungpur in 1825¹; of the Assam Local Corps in August and September of 1828, and that of the detachment of the 54th under the command of fair Lt. Comie in May 1829, had made the matter so serious that this second point could not be overlooked.²

More detailed plans soon followed in swift succession, and meanwhile Scott's ideas were strongly advocated by Secretary Swinton to the governor-general-in-council. Stressing Scott's idea of teaching the native soldiers the lessons of discipline and obedience, Swinton observed "our only force in Sylhet is composed of Manipurians. These men have always behaved well and on one occasion in particular gave strong proof of their fidelity when ^atempered with by a chief of their own tribe. But it may not be prudent to trust too implicitly to this feeling of loyalty".³

Scott had also detailed to Swinton his proposals for a sanatorium. Cattle might economically be purchased in the breeding districts and then driven in large herds up into the hills, "where in addition to the advantages of good pasturage for the cattle the manure produced would render it practicable to raise abundant crops of vegetables for the use of the troops".⁴ To take charge of this

-
- 1 On 15 October, 1825, about 37 men of the Grenadier Company of the 46th Regiment stationed at Rungpur approached the pay havildar and stated that if they were ordered to march towards Assam they would refuse, because of the mortality from sickness there. It was only through Col. Richards' personal influence that the sepoys agreed to march and it was also due to him that the death sentences against the ringleaders were not executed. See A. Barat, The Bengal Native Infantry, pp. 221-222.
 - 2 B.S.P.C. 16 Apr. 1830, nos. 3-4, Scott to Swinton, 12 March 1830.
 - 3 B.P.C. 18 June 1830, no. 57, Swinton's note, 15 June 1830.
 - 4 B.P.C. 25 June 1830, no. 44, Scott to Swinton, 11 June 1830.

operation he recommended a certain Fenwick, who was already accustomed to dealing with the hill peoples. These measures, too, Swinton pressed upon the Council, urging that there should be "no obstacles for a fair trial of the experiment and a steady officer in command of 20 or 30 labour, to ascertain, upon a larger scale what could be grown. This invalids with an assistant surgeon should be sent up in boats to the foot of the hills from which they would reach the sanatorium in one day's march".¹

A few days later on 24 June, 1830, Swinton placed before the Council all of Scott's correspondence, public and private, regarding his plans for the hills. Scott had assured him that forty European soldiers could easily be kept supplied at Cherrapunji²: provisions could be brought by boat from Sylhet for no more than five annas a maund, while black cattle in excellent condition could be bought on the spot for eight to ten rupees a head, and cattle of an inferior description for much less at the foot of the hills. Scott also reported that potatoes, turnips and beetroot could be produced in such abundance in the higher regions that they could be profitably used for feeding cattle during the winter months. Wheat was found to thrive and judging from the results of some experiments the land was considered probably capable of producing opium at a cheaper rate and of a better quality than in any other part of the Company's territory.³

1 B.P.C. 18 June 1830, no. 57, Swinton's note of 15 June 1830.

2 In Scott's letter of 9 April 1830 to Swinton he described Myllem as yet another healthy place. The tract comprised about twenty to thirty square miles of the most elevated portion of the country. This he thought would be a most advantageous site for a cantonment for European troops "the ground very tolerably level and the soil apparently capable of producing the European grains, fruits and vegetables as well as of affording good pasturage for the cattle.

3 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 2, Swinton's note of 24 June 1830.

3 Ibid.

private letter to Swinton Scott observed: "The object of being independent of foreign supply for horses is one of such consequence that I should suppose Government would be disposed to try any experiment privately established a farm at Mairong, run with government convict labour, to ascertain, upon a larger scale what could be grown. This venture he had begun without government's sanction, for on 4 June, 1830, he applied for the waiving of the restriction upon land holding by British officers and for retrospective approval for his use of convict labour.¹

Scott also suggested that experiments should be undertaken to discover whether horses suitable for military purposes could be bred in the Khasi hills more cheaply than was practicable elsewhere. In the Nongkhlaio and Mylliem districts he saw several hundred square miles of good pasture land, unoccupied and likely to remain so, which although not rich, were quite suitable for breeding black cattle and horses. "The object of the experiment would not be" Scott said "to breed horses of the best description since such will bear the expense of housing and constant attendance, but to ascertain whether cattle fit for military service could be bred at a much cheaper rate than is elsewhere practicable". He proposed that a stallion and a sufficient number of young brood mares should be sent by water to Sylhet so that they could be kept in the neighbourhood of Mairong where after being acclimated they could "be turned loose in parks or even without enclosures with a few sheds for shelter during rainy weather".² In a

1 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 4 June 1830;
B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 65, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 17 July 1830.

2 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 2, Scott to Swinton, 4 June 1830.

private letter to Swinton Scott observed : "The object of being independent of foreign supply for horses is one of such consequence that I should suppose Government would be disposed to try any experiment that holds out a reasonable chance of effecting it, and I must say that of all the countries I have seen in India including the Tirhoot and present stud districts I think this by far the most promising". Scott was so eager for the experiment that he even promised to undertake four superintending visits a year to the place if the plan were authorised.¹

Swinton was also able to report certain practical steps taken by Scott. He had not only built accommodation for forty invalids, but had also put up two small cottages, to be hired by officers or by private individuals. To most of Scott's measures Government approval was granted. Mr. Fenwick was appointed superintendent, surveyor and commissariat agent for the invalid centre, at two hundred rupees a month. The Bengal commissariat was instructed, in conjunction with Fenwick, to provide a supply of rum, tea, sugar and other necessaries for forty European invalids. By a resolution of 29 June, 1830, these were ordered to be selected from the artillery at Dumdum and sent by water, without delay, to the sanatorium at Cherrapunji. The officer commanding the party was placed entirely under the orders of Scott, who was to guide his conduct towards the chief and people of Cherrapunji. With the party was also sent a medical officer, Assistant-Surgeon Rhodes, who was to keep a regular meteorological journal, and to watch

1 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 2, from Swinton's note on Scott's letter, 24 June, 1830.

and report on the effects of the climate on the health of the men under his charge.¹ Lord Bentinck approved of Scott's plan to establish a stud farm in the hills, and he also sanctioned the leasing of further houses to private individuals. But though whole-heartedly behind the invalid station, he ignored for the time being, the question of posting a European force in cantonment at Cherrapunji. Rather he pinned his hope of establishing control and discipline upon the presence of the European invalids and the belief that "unshackled by the prejudices of caste, the Cossya Highlanders may readily amalgamate with their European commanders and their physical temperament may better qualify them to serve in the same ranks".²

In all this Bentinck was supported by his councillors Bayley and Dalhousie. But Charles Metcalfe, also of Council, took a diametrically opposite view. He thought most of Scott's proposals were premature, except for his plans to station a native force at Sylhet and to establish a European cantonment in the Khasi hills.³ Metcalfe had been thinking seriously since 1829 about the fate of the British empire in India. In October of that year he reminded the government of the disparity between the Company's native and European army and its consequences: "Our whole real strength consists in the few European Regiments, speaking comparatively, that are scattered singly over the vast

1 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 1, Minute by the Governor General W.C. Bentinck concurred and signed by Dalhousie and W.B. Bayley, 26 June 1830; Bentinck Papers, PwJf 2791, Swinton to Scott, 29 June 1830.

2 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 1, W.C. Bentinck's Minute, 26 June 1830; Bentinck Papers, PwJf 2791, 1830.

3 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 3, Metcalfe's Minute, 2 July 1830.

4 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

space of subjugated India. That is the only portion of our soldiery whose hearts are with us, and whose constancy can be relied on in the hour of trial. All our native establishments, military or civil are the followers of fortune. They serve us for their livelihood, and generally serve us well ... but in their inward feelings they partake more or less of the universal disaffection, which prevails against us, not from bad government, but from natural and irresistible antipathy".¹ Metcalfe therefore, commenting that he would rather see "efficient soldiers sent to that country than invalids", argued that a cantonment would be "entirely unobjectionable and highly desirable for the purpose of giving confidence to our well affected subjects on that frontier, where considerable alarm prevails apparently from the want of sufficient force". He could think of only one drawback in pushing a European force into the Khasi hills : that "if a force of that description be posted for the purpose of overawing the native inhabitants the withdrawing of it, when required for service elsewhere might become the signal for insurrection".²

But the demonstration of such practical details were only the preliminaries to the unfolding by Scott of views of "a more general and extended nature". What Scott set out was nothing less than a review of the essential basis of British power in India, a review of "the peculiar circumstances, military, political and financial, of the Indian empire."³

-
- 1 Bentinck Papers PwJf 2479. Extract from Sir Charles Metcalfe's Minute of 11 Oct. 1829 in reply to W.B.'s letter on the subject of Lord Ellenborough's questions.
 - 2 B.P.C. 2 July 1830, no. 3, Metcalfe's Minute, 2 July 1830.
 - 3 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

in reality be less efficient and more expensive than European troops. Scott began from the basic position that the British had so weak a hold on their Indian possessions that its strengthening should at all times be receiving serious consideration. In particular, serious consideration should always be given to their double edged weapon the native sepoy army, at once their main strength and weakness. About the sepoy army, he argued, there were two opinions current. One was that the sepoy army was a match for any enemy, capable of making a competent defence even against a major western power : those who held such a view based it upon parade performance and the brilliant success of the Indian army in the past. The second view was that the sepoys were unfitted for such a task and incapable of withstanding the rough treatment they would receive at a western power's hands : to this attitude the evident disorganisation into which much of the native army had fallen contributed, and the evidence provided by the Burmese campaign that neither the Bengal nor the Madras sepoy could be depended on to carry an entrenchment in face of any show of resistance.¹

Whichever attitude was correct, the situation was full of danger. If the sepoys could meet Europeans on equal terms then they were, in fact, masters of the country and government. They would soon come to know their power from the liberal press and other instruments adopted to enlighten the people. If those who believed the sepoys to be a broken reed were right, then they could not be relied upon for defence against foreign attack, and even for ordinary service they must

1 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

in reality be less efficient and more expensive than European troops. The remedy for either situation was an expansion of the European portion of the army until it was more equal in number to the native force.¹

The stumbling block in the way of such a plan was, as Scott saw, the financial cost. It was as a means of surmounting the financial obstacle therefore that Scott put forward his plan for European settlement in the Khasi hills. He asked whether "it might not be practicable to substitute for regular troops, European military colonies which after a comparatively trifling outlay of not exceeding 100 Rs. per man would be able to maintain themselves".² Considering the existing state of the population of Great Britain and Ireland Scott felt that the means of procuring men lay ready to hand : many would come willingly if offered easy terms. The colonists could be promised an ample supply of all the necessaries of life, and even luxuries, in return for working three hours a day for the state. They would be provided with land and stock, which would remain the property of the state, but from the produce of which they would support themselves and provide in part at least for the maintenance and payment of their officers. During the period of their engagement they would be subject to strict military discipline, but after the expiration of this period they might be enabled to receive a certain portion of land and a small stock of cattle.

1 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

2 Ibid.

3 Ibid.

Further hints on the organisations of the colonies might be drawn, Scott suggested, from the practice of the Russian government.¹

The colonies, he made clear, should be of a purely military character and ordinary settlers should not be admitted unless they became subject to military law. The sole object in view should be "to provide at a small expense a large body of European troops for the defence of the British Indian Empire and no inferior considerations should be allowed to interfere in any way with its accomplishment in the most certain and perfect manner".² Were one such colony provided in the Khasi and another in the Nilgiri hills, places where five to ten thousand men might readily be located, it would be quite possible, he believed to dispense with the whole of the regular European force then posted in the Bombay and Madras presidencies, and in Bengal and Bihar.³

Stokes has commented upon the authoritarian strain in utilitarianism revealed by its advocates in India. The philosophy expressed by Scott reveals a most intriguing blend of authoritarianism and imperialism. Writing about the ultimate political consequences of establishing such colonies, he said "If a government strictly military were maintained, the children would be brought up with those notions of obedience to authority which it is desirable that with reference to the object of the establishment they should always continue to retain

1 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

2 Ibid. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July

3 Ibid.

2 Ibid.

and if at any future period they should from their increasing numbers and military training become formidable their energies might always be conveniently directed to the eastward where the foundation of a fourth presidency would afford them employment for which it is not likely that with such neighbour as the Burmese and Siamese justifiable ground would ever be wanting."¹

Scott was not content with posing major problems of the females, might be expected to increase at the rate of one quarter of British presence in India, and with enunciating a philosophy, he backed the whole number per annum. At that rate, even supposing one eighth to up his proposals with a detailed examination of the mechanics of his plan. He set out the way in which the Khasi hills might be made progressive increase of another eighth upon the whole existing stock ductive enough, within four or five years, to maintain any number of which would consequently be doubled every sixth year. The annual European troops which it might be thought desirable to settle there. He had already mentioned the ease with which supplies, especially of ductive, would provide regular supplies for the troops at no further animal food, might be conveyed by boat from Bengal to the foothills. expense to the government. Scott told the government that they should He now sought to show that the hills might be made independent of the not consider his reasoning to be based on vague grounds but rather on lowlands for every description of produce not purely of tropical past experience. Even better results had been repeatedly obtained in growth.²

The first step in his plan would be to stock the country with twenty thousand black cattle. These could be easily and cheaply simultaneously flourish. The large quantity of manure produced by each acquired in the Bengal presidency and could be transported to the herd of cattle would naturally be applied to arable farming and in a hills, in the course of a couple of years, at trifling expense. If so country so thinly populated a great comparative addition would thus be many were not at once obtainable then a start could be made with half that number of cattle, which should be branded and distributed among

1 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July

2 1830. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July

2 Ibid.

the natives of the Khasi hills, in herds of one or two hundreds.¹ These native herdsmen should be rewarded for their services by giving them all the bull calves, government retaining all the heifers. Inspectors would be placed over every ten to twenty such herds, charged with branding the calves and preventing any gross negligence or fraud by their keepers. Soil and climate being very favourable the cattle would increase and multiply, so that the governments' part of the stock, the females, might be expected to increase at the rate of one quarter of the whole number per annum. At that rate, even supposing one eighth to be killed annually for the use of the troops there would still be a progressive increase of another eighth upon the whole existing stock which would consequently be doubled every sixth year. The annual slaughter of one eighth of the stock, as the cows ceased to be productive, would provide regular supplies for the troops at no further expense to the government. Scott told the government that they should not consider his reasoning to be based on vague grounds but rather on past experience. Even better results had been repeatedly obtained in less favourable conditions in New South Wales and other colonies.²

Scott then developed his theme of agriculture, which would simultaneously flourish. The large quantity of manure produced by each herd of cattle would naturally be applied to arable farming, and in a country so thinly populated a great comparative addition would thus be

1 Scott proposed such a distribution so that "the government officers should not be embarrassed with the details of a large establishment".

2 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

made to the produce of the soil if not at first in the shape of the European roots and grains, at least in that most productive of all corn crops, maize, already grown abundantly even without the use of manure. The speedy extension of this and other crops without any proportionate increase of the native population would make it possible to use some for the feeding of pigs and poultry, for which a ready market would be found, first in the preliminary cantonment and then in the colony. Scott elaborated in detail how this would help to solve the food problem. His plan was by the gratuitous distribution to the best native cultivators of two or three thousand swine to increase this species of stock so as to provide for the supply of a very considerable portion of the food required for even a large body of troops. At the expiration of the fourth year - when the first batch of oxen become fit for the market - this body might be increased to two thousand men. For these men there would then be available annually, produced in the country itself, a supply of two thousand cows, twenty five hundred oxen and any number of hogs, progressively increasing. The oxen and the hogs would be the property of the natives and the meat would of course be purchased. But as there would be no effective demand for them except on the part of the government the price would necessarily be low, and the whole of the cost of beef and pork would not in all probability amount to one half of what for the time being was paid below.¹

¹ B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

Savings to be effected by the proposed plan All these plans and calculations were then set out in a table, showing the estimated cost and return involved in preparing a site in the Khasi hills for two thousand European troops or colonists.

at 4 percent		Sicca Rs.	80,000
Purchase of 10,000 cows	-	Sicca Rs.	70,000
do 200 bulls	-		1,600
do 30 English bulls to improve the breed - at Rs. 300	-		9,000
Commission and charges of conveying them to the hills	-		12,900
Building for the cattle 100 sheds	-		10,500
at Rs. 100 each	-		10,000
do for the Superintendent	-		5,000
Charges of superintendence for 4 years	-		28,800
Purchase of swine etc. to be distributed to the cultivators	-		4,000
Seeds etc. above included only the stock farming but that it would of course be desirable to have also a brewery and distillery and four mills to be worked by water. The estimated charge for the erection of these would be about sixty thousand Sicca Rs. which could be repaid by a further 10 annual saving of about twenty percent on the current outlay. However, he thought these would not be absolutely necessary for a force of only twenty thousand	-		3,000
Total outlay		Sicca Rs.	144,300
Add interest on 1,20,000 rupees for 4 years			28,800
		Sicca Rs.	173,100
Deduct the value of 4,000 cows killed for the use of the troops	-		32,000
Remaining net charge at the end of the 4th year		Sicca Rs.	141,100

Scott's plans for establishing a European military cantonment

Subsequent charges

Interest on Rs. 1,50,000 at 6 percent		Sicca Rs.	9,000
Superintendence after the arrival of the troops at Rs. 1,000 per month			12,000
Buildings and contingencies	-		7,200
Total annual charges after the 4th year		Sicca Rs.	28,200

Savings to be effected by the arrangement after the 4th year.

Extra insurance on the lives

of 2,000 men valued at £ 100 each at 4 percent Sicca Rs. 80,000

Savings on the rations of 2,000 men at Re. 1 per man 24,000

Annual increase of stock estimated at 1/8 proressively increasing but in this year would be about

at 7 rupees 10,500

Total annual saving Sicca Rs. 114,500

deduct preceeding charge 28,200

Remaining net savings annually Sicca Rs. 86,300

The above included only the stock farming but Scott said that it would of course be desirable to have also a brewery and distillery and made, and what means might be available on the spot for the construction of four mills to be worked by water. The estimated charge for the erection of temporary barracks. Scott was advised to discuss such matters with Lt. Fisher of the Quarter Master General's Department, whose long employment on the Sylhet frontier would enable him to supply much useful information. The plan which Scott supplied subsequently in July, 1830, necessary for a force of only twenty thousand men.¹

Scott's plans for establishing a European military cantonment or colonies were certainly a topic of interest to the Calcutta Council for this was a time when men like Bentinck and Metcalfe were giving serious thought to the task of strengthening the European hold on British

1 B.P.C. 13 Aug. 1830, no. 72, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 21 July 1830.

India. In October, 1829, Metcalfe thought exactly in the same way as Scott did, when he opined that "the most obvious method of improvement but that hitherto much disputed, is the admission of Europeans to settle and hold property in India. Their settlement has never been entirely prohibited, and latterly has been facilitated and encouraged; but the removal of the remaining restrictions on their lawfully acquiring and holding property is necessary; and for their satisfaction the cessation of the power possessed by the Government of sending them out of the country is indispensable".¹ Lord Bentinck himself was unhappy about "the disproportion between the European and Native army" which, according to him, was "quite unintelligible in point of policy".² Thus, although Scott's proposal in June, 1830, for a European cantonment, was not at once accepted, he was asked by Bentinck to submit a separate dispatch pointing out what previous arrangements should be made, and what means might be available on the spot for the construction of temporary barracks. Scott was advised to discuss such matters with Lt. Fisher of the Quarter Master General's Department, whose long employment on the Sylhet frontier would enable him to supply much useful information.³ The plan which Scott supplied subsequently in July, 1830, for the improvement of the resources of the Khasi hills and their

1 Bentinck Papers, PwJf 2479. Extract from Sir Charles Metcalfe's Minute of 11 Oct. 1829.

2 W.C. Bentinck's marginal notes on Metcalfe's Minute of 11 Oct. 1829, Bentinck Papers, PwJf, 2479.

3 Bentinck Papers, PwJf 2791, 1830. Swinton to Scott, 29 June 1830.

greater suitability for a European cantonment was found satisfactory by the government¹, but before they could give a final shape to his plan and carry it out, Scott's attention was diverted to the troubles of Upper Assam.² His death, soon after, in August, 1831, put an end to the whole concept of European military colonies in the Khasi hills.

In 1825 there was a famine in Assam. Much distress had been caused by the plundering of the Burmese and their allies, while the pressure on existing food resources was increased by the advance of British forces and the release of several thousand Assamese captives from the hands of the Singphos. To meet this situation Scott adopted the old Ahom expedient of allowing freemen to sell themselves as slaves. In June he issued a proclamation permitting such sales until the next harvest in October.¹ This measure was subsequently sanctioned by the Calcutta Council.²

The Court of Directors, however, voiced their strong disapproval, declaring in a letter of 10 March, 1830, that "slavery in every form was peculiarly revolting to the moral feelings of Englishmen".³ Scott was thereupon asked by the governor-general-in-council to report upon the state of slavery in Assam, and such "practicable and expedient" measures as would permit a gradual abolition of the

¹ Bentinck Papers, P.W.Jf 2791, 1830. Swinton to Scott, 5 Nov. 1830.⁵

² See *supra*, pp. 135-137 no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 4 March 1828;

P.L.B., vol. 21, letter of 8 May 1829.

³ B.P.C. 3 Apr. 1828, no. 19, Sterling to Scott, 3 Apr. 1828.

⁴ Courts letter to Bengal, 10 March 1830.

⁵ B.S.P.C. 30 Apr. 1830, no. 64, Swinton to Scott, 30 Apr. 1830.

⁶ Appendix VI, No. 5, Report from Indian Law Commissioners relative to Slavery in the East Indies. P.P., vol. 28, 1841, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 10 Oct. 1830.

wherein he not only stated that the Assamese system of slavery was, and why he thought its abolition would be unwise, but also set out a justification of his 1825 proclamation.

CHAPTER VII

DAVID SCOTT AND SLAVERY IN ASSAM

Slavery had long been extensive in Assam. Under the Ahoms the chief wealth of all the upper classes had consisted of the labour of the paiks. In 1825 there was a famine in Assam. Much distress had been caused by the plundering of the Burmese and their allies, while the pressure on existing food resources was increased by the advance of British forces and the release of several thousand Assamese captives from the hands of the Singphos. To meet this situation Scott adopted the old Ahom expedient of allowing freemen to sell themselves as slaves. In June he issued a proclamation permitting such sales until the next harvest in October.¹ This measure was subsequently sanctioned by the Calcutta Council.²

As the slave force in Assam was mainly derived from the sale of freemen, the Court of Directors, however, voiced their strong disapproval, declaring in a letter of 10 March, 1830, that "slavery in every form was peculiarly revolting to the moral feelings of Englishmen".³ Scott was thereupon asked by the governor-general-in-council to report upon the state of slavery in Assam, and such "practicable and expedient" measures as would permit a gradual abolition of the system of slavery.⁴ This he did in a long letter of 10 October, 1830.⁵

1 B.P.C. 3 Apr. 1828, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 4 March 1828; P.L.B., vol. 21, letter of 8 May 1829.

2 B.P.C. 3 Apr. 1828, no. 19, Sterling to Scott, 3 Apr. 1828.

3 Courts letter to Bengal, 10 March 1830.

4 B.S.P.C. 30 Apr. 1830, no. 64, Swinton to Scott, 30 Apr. 1830.

5 Appendix VI, No. 5, Report from Indian Law Commissioners relative to Slavery in the East Indies. P.P., vol. 28, 1841, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 10 Oct. 1830.

wherein he not only explained what the Assamese system of slavery was, and why he thought its abrupt abolition would be unwise, but also set out a justification of his 1825 proclamation.

Slavery had long been extensive in Assam. Under the Ahoms the chief wealth of all the upper classes had consisted of the labour of the paiks allotted to them by government and that of their slaves, upon which they depended for the cultivation of their lands.¹ Many temples were granted slaves, or Bohotias, for their service, by the king or other individuals. Thus one of the temples of Kamakhya held between twenty and twenty five slaves.² In many cases the higher orders had no other property besides the labour of their slaves. Even in 1830 a census which gave the population of Lower Assam as 350,000 estimated that of these 27,000 were slaves.³

As in other parts of India, the slave force in Assam was mainly derived from the sale of children by their parents in times of individual distress or general scarcity. Adult women would also sometimes sell themselves to discharge a debt or relieve their parents and relations, while free women who married slaves also became the slaves of their husband's owners. The children born to slaves were themselves slaves, and so usually were the children of slave women born to freemen. Prisoners of war and criminals often had their sentences committed to

1 E.A. Gait, op.cit., p. 241.

2 P.P., vol. 28, 1841, p. 96.

3 Appendix VI, No. 4, R.I.L.C., Capt. White to Scott, 9 Aug. 1830.

3 E.A. Gait, op.cit., p. 241; Asiatic Researches, vol. 16, pp. 337-9.

slavery after being condemned to death. The king granted such persons - and sometimes even free individuals also - to his nobles and spiritual advisers.¹

Others became slaves by an abuse of the system of conditional bondage which was common in Assam. Such bondage had two main forms. In the one, the Bhaktadasa, as he was called in Hindu law books, voluntarily placed himself under the protection of some great man in return for his food. There were said to be some three or four thousand persons of this class in Lower Assam in 1830, working upon the estates of rich men in return for their bare maintenance. They were at liberty to depart when they pleased. Their numbers had grown during the disturbed years before the advent of the British. The other main form of bondage arose when freemen pledged their services to their creditors to clear off a debt. They either mortgaged their services for a specific period - for seven, fourteen or twenty years, or until such time as their services should have cleared off their debt. Such bondsmen easily slipped into the position of true slaves.²

Again, many Assamese had been enslaved by the hill tribes advancing from the Burmese borders towards the Sadiya frontier after the outbreak of Ahom civil wars in 1814. The Burmese invasion merely enlarged the opportunities for such slaving by the Khamtis and Singphos who accumulated many thousands of slaves.³

1 P.P., vol. 28, 1841, p. 96.

2 Ibid, p. 97.

3 E.A. Gait, op.cit., p. 286; Asiatic Researches, vol. 16, pp.337-9.

Such, in outline, was the historical background to the situation in Assam : how Scott reacted to it was obviously of importance to Assam, but also very revealing of his own personal philosophy. He opened his argument about what the British government's attitude to slavery should be, by pointing out that slavery, being consistent with Hindu and with Muslim law, was necessarily legal everywhere in India. Moreover, the frequent reference to donations of slaves to temples and to pious men showed that the system had been in force among the Hindus from a remote period. Slavery in Assam was thus in harmony both with law and popular custom.¹

But though slavery was so sanctioned it was not widespread in Assam, certainly less alarmingly so than in other parts of India. Even taking Captain White's figure² of one in twelve as correct this gave only eight per cent of the population of Lower Assam as slaves, compared with twenty per cent in the Muslim dominated district of Sylhet. Moreover Scott believed that White's estimate might well have been inflated by the inclusion of bondsmen who were not slaves in the proper sense of the word. For the probably very low proportion of slaves in the Assamese population Scott gave several reasons. The main one was that under the paik system the Ahom government had a claim upon the labour of all free men, or upon their industry.³ Fiscal regulations therefore

1 Appendix VI, no. 5, R.I.L.C., Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830.

2 Appendix VI, no. 4, R.I.L.C., White to Scott, 9 Aug. 1830.

3 B.P.C. 3 Apr. 1828, no. 18, Scott to Swinton, 4 March 1828; Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830.

prohibited the enslavement of freemen (females of course might sell themselves, or be sold by their parents, if the sale was valid in Hindu law). Again, in contrast to other areas, there was no importation of slaves, except for a few Naga women presented by the hill chiefs to the Ahom kings.¹ Moreover, though according to Hindu law a free woman marrying a slave became herself a slave and gave birth to servile progeny, in Assam masters frequently permitted their slaves to marry free women upon a special contract with the girl's father that the progeny should be free. In cases of doubt, the ordinary rule was that the children followed the condition of the parent with whose relations the family resided. Thus the children of a female slave might be free, if she had married a free man and the children lived with him.²

Slavery was thus legal, but of limited extent in Assam. Scott was also of the opinion that, on the whole, the slaves of Assam were better treated than anywhere else in the Presidency. In poor and middling families, the slaves and bondsmen were treated like the other inmates, the same kitchen serving for the whole household, and both mistress and maid being entirely clothed in home spun dress. Among the rich they often obtained great influence and ruled their masters' affairs in the capacity of dewans. Scott reported that such persons were even to be seen riding in a sort of palankeen. In such cases the

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 5.

2 Ibid, para 6.
The slaves were not asked to join the armies at the time of war. The king had no control over those belonging to the state officers and nobles. Such slaves considered themselves lucky in comparison to the paiks. See S.K. Bhuyan, Ahomar Din (in Assamese), p. 55; E.A. Gait, op.cit., pp. 241-242.

3 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 8.

birth of a child entitled the mother to her freedom, and her offsprings were also at the same time allowed to share the family property along with the children of their wives.¹ If, as was commonly held the slaves in Assam were of dissolute and depraved habits compared with the free population, in physical condition they were never worse off than the peasantry of the country. Scott argued that if they could not legally accumulate property - which, however, in practice was not the case - neither could they suffer those evils from the total want of it to which the freeman was subjected. It had ^{not} ~~both~~ been uncommon to find free Assamese at different periods of Ahom rule seeking to become slaves to avoid the oppressions ~~to~~ which the paiks or other free people had to undergo.² Scott declared that slavery was often more a problem to the owners than to the slaves themselves. When the latter became too numerous and exceedingly idle, the masters were unnecessarily put to expense on their account. They had to feed them and provide for the expenses incidental to their births, marriages, deaths and all other religious ceremonies, which they performed with the same regularity as the free population. To sell their slaves was considered highly discreditable and indicative of the total ruin of the master.³

liberty. This picture of the condition of the slaves given by Scott was not challenged by the later report of the Indian Law Commission on the same subject. "It appears to be the general opinion" they wrote

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 9.

2 The slaves were not asked to join the armies at the time of war. The king had no control over those belonging to the state officers and nobles. Such slaves considered themselves lucky in comparison to the paiks. See S.K. Bhuyan, Ahomar Din (in Assamese), p. 55; E.A. Gait, op.cit., pp. 241-242.

3 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 8.

"that the slaves in Assam were on the whole well treated".¹ Complaints of oppression were not infrequent immediately after the acquisition of the country by the British, but there were many complaints from the side of masters also.² Adam White, who was Scott's assistant in the administration of Lower Assam, wrote to him that from every enquiry that he had made the condition of the slaves appeared nearly upon a par with that of the agricultural labourers. They were employed in cultivating the lands of their masters and received a fair amount of clothing. If a person possessed many slaves he only required the labour of a few in rotation and allowed the others to engage in the cultivation of lands, for the rent of which he became responsible, reserving to himself what profit there might be after allowing the slave a fair maintenance. The same officer argued that the peculiar geographical position of Assam presented a check on the masters' severity towards their slaves. Being a narrow valley between two ranges of mountains, a day's journey was enough to put a slave beyond the reach of his master. He said that he also found on enquiry amongst the paiks that they scarcely considered the condition of the slaves at all inferior to theirs, except that they did not possess their personal liberty, for the field labours of the slaves did not exceed those of the paiks and those were light indeed as compared with the agricultural population of Europe.³

1 P.P., vol. 28, 1841, p. 98

2 Ibid.

3 Appendix VI, no. 4, R.I.L.C., Capt. White to Scott, 9 Aug. 1830.

Having thus set out the nature of slavery in Assam, Scott proceeded to give his views about its abolition. In the process he showed himself to be in close agreement with Warren Hastings in believing that "the people of this country do not require our aid to furnish them with a rule for their conduct, or a standard for their property",¹ and with Munro in arguing that "neither the face of the country, its property, nor its society, are things that can be suddenly improved by any contrivance of ours, though they may be greatly injured by what we mean for their good".² In his report Scott made it clear that he believed it would be morally wrong for the British government, being pledged to administer to the local people their own laws in matters of inheritance, contracts etc., to infringe that principle by the abrogation of a practice so closely interwoven in the whole fabric of Assamese society. Scott said that it would be unjust on the part of the British government to breach engagements held hitherto, so sacred, on the plea that the system was repugnant to humanity and good morals. The condemnation of slavery by a nation professing christianity seemed inconsistent to Scott, for this institution had been sanctioned by God for the Jews, and since it was humane in India would surely have His sanction there.³

-
- 1 G.R. Gleig, Life of Warren Hastings, vol. I, p. 401.
 - 2 Minute of Munro 'On the state of the country', 31 Dec. 1824 : G.R. Gleig, Life of Sir Thomas Munro, vol. III, p. 381.
 - 3 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 12.

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 12.

2 Ibid.

are naturally pointed out these difficult social problems which abolition would create, both for the rich and for the poor. In Assam the seclusion of their women by the higher orders of society, and the early marriage of the lower orders which made it impossible to hire unmarried girls as servants, as in European countries, made it necessary for the wealthy to look to female slaves for household attendants - a system quite agreeable to existing usage and custom. Any change would be very unpopular with the higher classes.¹ Scott also doubted whether change would even, in reality, be beneficial to the lower orders. He was well aware of the evil consequences of the slavery, and was prepared to admit that perhaps a fourth of all slaves in Assam were of more dissolute and depraved habits than the free population. But then these were the slaves who had sold themselves for debt, persons who in all probability had originally belonged to that imprudent and spendthrift class of society, which had its parallel in England. In England such persons enlisted in the army or navy, or by a criminal career came to be transported to the colonies "as the undisguised slaves of the crown".² The problem of the feckless poor could no more easily be dealt with in Assam than in the highly civilized European societies. As he said, "Whether it is possible, even in highly civilized countries, to dispense with the retention of this portion of society in a state of constrained servitude, is still to be proved, the experiment never having been fairly tried by the European states, where the armies, the navies, the galleys and the colonies, furnish receptacles for those who

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 12.

2 Ibid.

are naturally incompetent to manage their own affairs and to preserve their personal independence. The people in this country have none of these resources; and the thriftless poor must consequently either starve or become the dependants of individuals, or in the capacity of criminals and debtors, fill the public gaols".¹

Stokes has commented, of the paternalists Munro, Malcolm, Metcalfe and Elphinstone, that "they had no hopes of sudden and miraculous changes in the progress of human society and there lingered in their thinking, particularly in Munro's, something of that older tradition, which saw the division of society into rulers and ruled as a natural ordering ...".² Scott in his arguments reflects much the same sort of attitude. In his boyhood in ^{Scot}England the problem of the English poor had been much debated. There had been some, like the Rev. D. Davies who argued that the plight of the poor was not the consequence of defects of the character, but that the defects of character were the consequence of poverty.³ But there were many expressions of the contrary view, ready to argue that "If the poor do not prudently serve themselves none can effectively befriend them ...".⁴ Scott was evidently very much of the latter opinion : the depraved or foolish poor would always undergo hardship, whether slave or not.

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 12.

2 See E. Stokes, op.cit.

3 D. Davies, The Case of Labourers in Husbandry (1795), quoted in A. Briggs, Age of Improvement, p. 60.

4 Eden's State of the Poor, vol. I, p. 508, quoted in A. Briggs, op.cit., p. 60 n.

matter. Scott also drew attention to the problem which abolition would bring upon the government. He doubted whether, while contemplating abolition, the government had given any thought to making compensation to the individuals who would lose a valuable category of private property.¹ He believed that the expense of abolition itself would render the plan impracticable, since the slaves and bondsmen in the two districts of Lower Assam and Sylhet could be valued at not less than thirty or forty lakhs of rupees.² Moreover, if slavery were done away with, government would have to make provision for maintaining the starving poor in times of scarcity. Such provision would be costly and its administration often^{open} to great abuse, which might well have just as ill an effect upon the character of the people as did the prevalence of slavery in Assam.³

Calculating all these factors, Scott felt that the practical evil arising from the continuance of slavery was not of sufficient magnitude to justify the British governments' seeking a theoretical triumph in achieving its immediate abolition.⁴ He insisted that government should obtain not only the opinion of its European functionaries but also that of a committee of intelligent natives. According to him these last alone were competent to judge in regard to a

1 Scott evidently showed the belief expressed in 1780, that the blessings and advantages which England enjoyed sprang "above all, from those just and equitable laws which secure property". See A. Briggs, op.cit., p. 8.

2 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 12.

3 Ibid.

4 Ibid, para 13.

2 Ibid, para 13.

matter in which the English had no personal interest and of which they had not even a slight knowledge. Moreover, the subject was so complicated by the delicate questions of marriage and the internal economy of the zenana - upon which the local peoples including both Hindus and Muslims were so exceedingly sensitive - that he despaired of any modification of the existing law emanating from European legislators which would be at all palatable to the upper and middling classes of people.¹ If anything must be done, then he suggested that the state of servitude of the bondsmen entitled to redemption should gradually be substituted for that of the slave absolute. This might be done, particularly in the case of agricultural labourers, by placing a tax of two or three rupees a year upon slaves, but leaving bondsmen exempt from taxation, provided the sum for which they were redeemable did not exceed forty rupees. If a compulsory register of slaves and bondsmen was opened, in which masters might enter persons either as slaves or bondsmen as they wished, he thought numbers of slaves would be entered as bondsmen to avoid the tax, so ensuring that they enjoyed all the privileges of the latter class.²

If a more rapid solution was required then government should fix a rate at which they would redeem slaves from their masters. This was the only valid way of compensating the higher classes for such an invasion of their private property rights : "if something must be done at their expense to satisfy the philanthropic feelings of the people of England, I should consider this as the least objectionable measure

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 16.

2 Ibid, para 14.-20.

that could be adopted, and as one which would also seem likely to prove acceptable to the English public, since it would afford to those who are zealous in the cause of emancipation an opportunity for the exercise of their benevolent views, by coming forward with the requisite funds".¹

From these general considerations Scott next turned to a defence of his actions in 1825 against the censure of the Court of Directors. He began by pointing out that he had been incorrectly charged with violating the laws and customs of British India. In the first place Assam had not then come under the formal administration of the British government, which was at that time much more engrossed with the conduct of war on the frontier than with the application of the Bengal Regulations to the society of a little known region. If he had sanctioned the sale of men as slaves, during a period of famine, he could at the most be charged with suspending the operation of the local Ahom regulation enacted to prevent the loss of crown paiks from the free population, and the consequent diminution of the state revenues. Moreover the Ahom government itself, during past famines, had granted permission for paiks to save their lives by becoming slaves. Finally, it was not the case, as supposed by the Court, that his sanction had conferred legality and validity upon contracts which were not agreeable to the provisions of Hindu and Muslim law. Indeed, in the eyes of the people slavery did not even offend against national law.²

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 15.

2 Ibid, paras 19-20.

Next, Scott explained the emergency which had prompted such a measure and the practical aspect of the question. He believed that the lives of the destitute persons, who in 1825 sold themselves in Assam, might have been preserved, without their being reduced to slavery, by supplying them with food on the public account. But he doubted very much whether an application to government for leave to expend twenty to thirty thousand rupees, or even a much larger sum, the request would have been complied with since the distress had been occasioned by a scanty crop. Anything short of such sums upon the importation of a large quantity of grain would ^{not} have afforded material relief.¹ This importation by government was impracticable at that time, as the whole tonnage on the river was required for troop movement in the war with Burma. He had no other way of mitigating the evil except to secure a reduction of individual consumption, by "making it the interest of those who had grain to divide it with those who had none".² It was surely a politically prudent act to make use of an existing custom when no alternative offered.

Scott was of the firm conviction that the opposition of the Court of Directors was the outcome of an Englishman's abhorrence towards the system of slavery as known to the West. Scott believed that the Directors had absolutely no idea of the structure of society in India and the needs of the common people. His measure had been aimed at serving the interest of the greatest number : it was not through an alien idealism that the needs and aspirations of the subject people

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, paras 19-20.

2 Ibid, para 19.

could be properly grasped.¹ He wrote : "That slavery, in the usual acceptance of the word, is repugnant to the feelings of Englishmen, I am well aware. But the question in this case to be considered was not whether slavery should, under ordinary circumstances, be patronized and encouraged, but whether I should in deference to the speculative suggestion that it might be possible to prohibit any future sales into opinions of my own countrymen, and in defiance of the wishes and feelings of those who were alone interested in the result, doom to certain death hundreds, if not thousands, of a starving population by refusing them permission to obtain the means of saving their lives upon terms, which, to them at least, seemed advantageous".²

Further, Scott argued that to the people of the East who were familiar with slavery, the novel prejudice of Europeans against that condition of civil life was quite unintelligible. Hence whatever motive he might have assigned for such a piece of cruelty, an order prohibiting the self-sale of the male population would have been interpreted by the Assamese as "a sordid determination on the part of their new masters, not to sacrifice any portion of the capitation tax, let the consequences to their subjects be what they might".³

Scott's contemporaries in Assam held much the same views about slavery and its abolition as he did. They believed that any attempt abruptly to abolish the system would be wrong. They were not blind to the evils in the system, but understanding the organic nature

1 Appendix VI, nos. 3 and 4, R.I.L.C., Reports of Capts. J.B. Neufville

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 20.

2 Ibid. Report, 10 Oct. 1830, paras 21-22.

3 Ibid.

of society believed that advance must be slow, and directed to the lessening of the evils without infringing the proprietary rights of individuals.¹

In his report Scott mentioned with approval Captain White's suggestion that it might be possible to prohibit any future sales into servitude except those subject to redemption, and to limit the period of bondage either to a term of years, or to the lives of the members of the family already in existence at the time of the contract. White believed that any total prohibition of sales into slavery would have ill consequences, but that future sales should be so limited that all progeny born after a contract would be free. Scott proposed that White's suggestions should be given specific form. All adults should be at liberty to sell themselves or their children, under such contracts as were valid under Hindu and Muslim law. They should not be allowed to entail servitude upon the second generation, or even upon members of the first generation born after the parents had become slaves.² Moreover those who were subject to servitude would retain the right of redemption, upon payment. The payment in the case of adults should be of the principal sum advanced, and in that of young children, of that sum, together with a reasonable compensation for the expense of bringing them up. This additional allowance was to be fixed by law, and should be liable to be again gradually remitted according

1 Appendix VI, nos. 3 and 4, R.I.L.C., Reports of Capts. J.B. Neufville and A. White, 26 July, 1830 and 9 Aug. 1830.

2 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, paras 21-22.

to the age the parties might have attained, and the services they might consequently be presumed to have rendered to their masters.¹

In Upper Assam, the political agent, Captain Neufville, proposed to make slavery less cruel by making the sale of slaves without their consent illegal. The transfer of a slave should take place before the chief of his khel or village, who would be required to ascertain that the person so sold consented to the sale. No one should be allowed forcibly to separate slave husband and wife, or slave mother and children, upon pain of an immediate grant of freedom to the slave.

Cases of great cruelty and oppression of slaves by their owners should be subjected to the investigation of the village heads, and if fully proved, punished by fine, or in atrocious cases by the ^{manu}remission of the sufferers. In cases where owners were compelled to sell their slaves due to want, scarcity and poverty, the owners would have to satisfy the parish meeting of the good character of the proposed purchaser and in this too, the prohibition against the division of a family would stand.² Neufville also suggested that the slaves belonging to revenue or other public defaulters whose effects were confiscated might be enrolled amongst the government paiks at the khats or in a district khel, allowing the estimated value to the credit of the owner's account.³

1 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 22.

2 Appendix VI, no 3, R.I.L.C., Neufville's Report, 26 July 1830.

3 Ibid. Appendix VI, no. 4, R.I.L.C., White to Scott, 9 Aug. 1830.

2 Ibid.

In his report of 9 August, 1830,¹ Capt. White went a stage further in his proposals for curbing slavery. He now suggested that life enslavement should be prohibited and no contract of bondage be held legal for a longer period than seven or fourteen years. At the same time encouragement might be held out to individuals to manumit their slaves, by the hope of obtaining government titles and distinctions for which the Assamese, he alleged, were very ambitious. In addition to this, from a certain date, all children born in a state of slavery should be declared free.²

White's summing up of the whole problem of slavery is interesting. While admitting "the demoralising effects of slavery in society" he professed the opinion that an immediate abolition of the system "would be apt to fail". He wrote: "From the records of history Jewish, Classical, Asiatic and European it appears that slavery has everywhere prevailed in the less advanced stages of civilization; and I apprehend, Assam, according to European notions, may be considered as a country exhibiting a still ruder state of society. Here generally speaking, the ryots cultivate only for the supply of their individual wants, and do not calculate upon a certain sale for their surplus produce. What fabrics of manufacture are produced, are generally the workmanship of the females of the family, not the product of a separate class of men; and as yet the commerce of Assam is still in its infancy, under these circumstances, if a poor man wants a sum of money for a

1 Appendix VI, no. 4, R.I.L.C., White to Scott, 9 Aug. 1830.

2 Ibid.

3 B.P.C. 26 Feb. 1830, no. 17, Scott to Swinton, 31 Dec. 1829.

specific purpose, the only valuable article he can give in exchange, is his labour; and this the rich men naturally endeavour to secure permanently by demanding a contract of slavery for life. Besides, here as elsewhere, in times of scarcity parents are wont to part with their children from a benevolent wish to preserve their lives. Were the country further advanced in the career of improvement, and capital more widely diffused, it appears to me this system of slavery and bondage would gradually diminish of itself as the poor man would obtain a small advance on easier terms".¹

In this comment of White's can be seen once again that pragmatic approach to the problem of slavery in Assam and of its mitigation or abolition exhibited by Scott. Scott's sanction of slavery in 1825 did not denote any lack of humanity on his part - it was not a brutal measure such as Warren Hastings' draconian law of 1772 for the enslavement of the families of dacoits² had been, but sprang from a genuine concern and understanding. Where he felt he could, Scott acted against slavery. Thus immediately after the liberation of Lower Assam he liberated some twelve thousand slaves³, and ordered Neufville to rescue and free the Assamese enslaved by the Singphos.⁴ Again, in 1829, he sought the sanction of government for the confiscation and freeing of the slaves of revenue and judicial defaulters.⁵ It should be noted

1 Appendix VI, no. 4, R.I.L.C., White to Scott, 9 Aug. 1830.

2 L.S.S. O'Malley, Modern India and the West, pp. 73-5.

3 E.A. Gait, op.cit., p. 242.

4 See supra, p. 96.

5 B.P.C. 26 Feb. 1830, no. 17, Scott to Swinton, 31 Dec. 1829.

that on that occasion it was the Calcutta authorities who demurred, asking Scott whether the freeing of such slaves would really be beneficial, or whether they would not in all probability sell themselves again into bondage, and so defeat the benevolent object of the government.¹ When in 1830^{Scott} once more proposed that instead of allowing convicted defaulters to sell their slaves at public auction to satisfy their creditors, they should be compelled to sell them at a fixed price to the government, which should thereupon set them free, the Calcutta authorities once more refused to act.² What was achieved in 1830 was as a result of Scott's initiative : he instructed the political Agent in Upper Assam to open a register for a period of six months for the purpose of recording the names of all slaves within his jurisdiction and to issue a proclamation that all persons remaining unregistered on the expiration of that period would be held to be free.³

But both Scott and White realised that any sudden abolition of slavery such as the doctrinaire idealism of the home authorities seemed to demand would do serious violence to Assamese society, possibly without any corresponding benefit to the slaves themselves. In 1825 abolitionist fervour might have caused the death of the starving poor. At any time abolition without compensation would gravely affect the upper classes who depended upon slave labour. Mill's report, on the damaging effects of abolition in 1843, declared in downright terms :

1 B.P.C. 26 Feb. 1830, no. 18, Swinton to Scott, 26 Feb. 1830.

2 B.P.C. 30 Apr. 1830, nos. 63-64, Scott to Swinton, 24 March 1830, Swinton to Scott, 30 Apr. 1830.

3 Appendix VI, no. 2, R.I.L.C., Scott to Neufville, 4 Feb. 1830.

"There is no doubt that this measure reduced the only men of substance in Assam to absolute poverty".¹ What was required, as both men saw, was attention to causes not symptoms. Thus, in his report Scott argued that the sale of girls and women, with a view to the discharge of their own or their relatives' debts, would best be prevented by government aid to their parents.² While the need existed, and slavery was agreeable to the law of the land, only some such practical approach could uproot the evil.³

Scott's attempt to provide the slave-raiding Singphos with new employment as traders and carriers between Assam and Burma⁴, and his efforts to press forward with the instruction of the Assamese in the useful arts, "without waiting for their slow introduction by chance or in ordinary progress of events"⁵, were, as he saw, the only practical approach to the problem of slavery in Assam.

1 A.J.M. Mills, op.cit., p. 17.

2 Scott's Report, 10 Oct. 1830, para 21.

3 Ibid.

4 See supra, p.

5 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to Swinton, 18 May 1831.

CHAPTER VIII

THE PHILOSOPHY OF DAVID SCOTT

In the last chapter, on slavery in Assam, a special instance was Scott's hope that Lower Assam would yield a substantial revenue, was considered of Scott's attitude to questions of moral and material and that the internal divisions in an area never fully subjected to progress. It is intended in this concluding chapter to draw together other expressions of his ideas on administration and its ultimate aims. His career for long stretches was filled with multifarious military, diplomatic and administrative tasks, following in quick succession, which constantly took him to new headquarters. He had little time for elaborate theoretical discussions of the problems of British rule in India. Nevertheless from the measures he took and the manner of their application, and from his letters and reports, it is possible to see the main features of his philosophy of government.

When Scott first came out to India the glow of Wellesley's expansive imperialism still coloured the scene and Scott himself was early involved in Lord Hastings' continuation of that policy of sub-jecting the whole Indian peninsula to British power. Scott, in his frontier field, proved as ready as Malcolm or Metcalfe to think in large imperial terms. He came into prominence while opening diplomatic relations with Bhutan and Tibet. He played a leading part in advocating a forward policy in the Assam valley, Cachar, Jaintia and Manipur. In October, 1823, he not only urged that offence would be the best means

of defence against Burmese encroachments, but strongly recommended that even if the existing differences with the Burmese government were settled amicably, certain parts of their newly acquired territories towards the Company's Bengal frontier should be demanded from them. Scott must share responsibility therefore, for Amherst's ill-conducted¹ war against Burma, though his own part in it went reasonably well. It was Scott's hope that Lower Assam would yield a substantial revenue, and that the internal divisions in an area never fully subjected to Ahom administration would make the assimilation of the Kamrup district easy, that led him to press upon the Supreme Government the inadvisability of an Ahom restoration in the lower Brahmaputra valley. Once retention had been decided upon Scott was led by the difficulties of river communication from Bengal, to advocate a land link from Sylhet to Gauhati through Jaintia and the Khasi hills. This in turn led to the vision of European military colonies in the hills, which would assure British dominance in India, and perhaps in Burma, making Assam the centre of a fourth Presidency.² With this imperial concept also went that of trade through Assam to Burma and to China, for as Stokes has pointed out, this was a period when the new needs of British industry were giving a new purpose to imperialism.

1 "The 'Arracan fever' (a particularly virulent malaria) and other disease claimed the real victory for in five months alone 259 Europeans out of 1,500 and 900 out of 1,000 Indians died and in the month of September 1825, 400 Europeans and 3,600 Indians were in hospital". See M. Edwardes, *The Necessary Hell*, p. 47; see also G.D. Bearce, *op.cit.*, pp. 50-51.

2 See *supra*, p. 228.

3 See R. M. M. *Journal of the Asiatic Society*, 1756-1898, pp. 191-192.

In these imperialistic attitudes, Scott was at one with such other great figures as Munro, Malcolm, Metcalfe and Elphinstone. Though he never served under any one of these four, and though the records provide no evidence of any close association with them, he also shared other ideas and opinions with them. Like them he was conservative and paternalist, opposed to the attempt to assimilate and anglicize everything traditionally Indian. He shared with them a distrust of the Cornwallis system, revolting in particular against the elevation of the zamindar class occasioned by the Permanent Settlement. By making them a part of the nobility, disrespect had been shown to the original institutions of Indian society and the peasantry had been harmed : "The only nobility acknowledged under the Mohamedan dynasty," Scott said, "was that of office; and I believe no part of our system has given more general discontent than the undue elevation which the class of zamindars had attained from their great wealth, the officers of government of inferior ranks such as seristadars, tehseldars dewans etc. having formerly been considered superiors".¹ This passage can be compared with that of Metcalfe's who wrote on the same subject thus "... we destroyed all the existing property in land, by creating a class of proprietors to whom we recklessly made over the property of others".² And if the introduction of English notions of the landowner had damaged Indian society, so would the introduction of English law. Scott foresaw that it would be the common people of India who would suffer. "There can be

¹ Asiatic Journal, vol. 7, 1832, p. 137.

² See R. Muir, The Making of British India, 1756-1858, pp. 191-192.

no greater mistake" he said "than to suppose that the lower classes are better protected in England than in India. The fact is, that in the former country they are entirely destitute of any rights or possessions of which they can be deprived, so as to give them any cause for complaint. Whoever hears of a day labourer wanting the protection of the law? He receives his daily hire, and pays for his hut or quits it, if he be ill-used, and has no concern with courts of law or occasion for their protection. I fancy the people in this country, if they ever obtain what it is the fashion to call the benefits of the English law, will find themselves in the situation of the frogs who prayed for a king, and at length got a stork set over them".¹ Alike in the Director's attack upon slavery, and in the application of the Cornwallis system, Scott saw - just as the Munro school did - "the ignorant application of a priori political ideas without regard to the history and circumstances of Indian society".²

Scott was also at one with Elphinstone, Malcolm, Metcalfe and Munro in wishing to conserve native institutions. He was as full of admiration for the popular political institutions of the Khasis³, as ever Metcalfe was for his "village republics", or Elphinstone for those Maratha communities which "contain in miniature all the materials of a state within themselves ..."⁴ In Assam he not only sought to use native juries and native judges for both civil and criminal cases, but

1 Asiatic Journal, vol. 7, 1832, p. 137.

2 E. Stokes, op.cit., p. 15.

3 See supra, p. 203

4 R. Muir, op.cit., p. 286.

even supported a system of popular election of revenue collectors.¹ He might well have penned Malcolm's letter to Wynne, quoted by Stokes, saying "With respect to raising natives both in the fiscal and judicial line, I am of the same sentiments as Sir Thomas Munro. . . . I desire to share the Aristocracy of Office with the natives of India".² Scott's wish to preserve an Ahom state in Upper Assam was another aspect of the same basic policy. He saw that in Kamrup, under British rule, a new class of officials must necessarily be introduced : an Ahom state in Upper Assam would make that provision for the native aristocracy which could not be made in Lower Assam. As has been seen in chapter IV (II), Scott believed that the native states had their strengths as well as their weaknesses, and that their traditional institutions, properly supported, could be made to work very well.³ What was perhaps novel, was Scott's dislike of the system of subsidiary alliances with such states, by which the Company committed itself to non-interference in the states' internal affairs. In Upper Assam he was very anxious to strengthen the native safeguards against autocratic misrule, and to make British government the guardian of the constitution.

In Assam, Scott was in favour of a paternal, non-regulation administration. One reason for relinquishing Upper Assam was the desire to keep the Company's possessions in Assam within his own personal

1 B.P.C. 30 May 1833, nos. 89 and 93; see chapter IV (II), p.124

2 E. Stokes, op.cit., p. 16 n.2 ; see also R. Muir, op.cit., p. 284.

3 Stokes points out that this was the attitude of Munro, Malcolm and Elphinstone - though not of Metcalfe. See E. Stokes, op.cit., p.21.

4 B.P.C. 3 March 1830, no. 61, Scott to Swinton, 3 Feb. 1830.

compass. Scott believed, like John Lawrence, that the officer must know his division intimately.¹ In Rangpur, in the Garo or Khasi hills, in Assam Scott was indefatigable in personally touring his charge, and he expected his officers to do likewise. He also believed that the laws and procedure used should be of the simplest kind, based as far as possible on native customs and institutions.² With this went Scott's stress upon personal accessibility and the maintenance of easy communications between officials and private individuals : White's Memoir makes clear how very fully Scott practiced what he preached in this regard.³

Such a system placed great strain upon the officials who had to work it, yet perhaps the most notable and consistent factor in all Scott's career was the scantiness of the European agency with which he had to work. Much of the criticism of Scott's measures might properly be laid at the door of a parsimonious government, which left Scott to manage vast areas with a mere handful of assistants. A quite typical situation was that of February, 1830. The ravages of the river Bornadi, which had devastated a tract of land yielding a revenue of some twelve thousand rupees, compelled Scott to go to the Darrang district to revise the settlement. This meant abandoning the sessions being held in Sylhet, for the only European official to whom Scott could have transferred his duties was the collector of Lower Assam, and he was already deeply involved in the overwhelming criminal business of his office.⁴

1 M. Edwardes, The Necessary Hell : John and Henry Lawrence and the Indian Empire, p. 131.

2 See *supra*, p. 242

3 See *supra*, p. 17

4 B.P.C. 5 March 1830, no. 61, Scott to Swinton, 9 Feb. 1830.

Later that year both White in Lower Assam¹ and Neufville in Upper Assam² stressed their need for English assistants - but the Supreme Government not only failed to provide them, but showed itself reluctant even to grant Neufville a boat allowance.³

An anonymous author in the Calcutta Review commented upon Captain Davidson has at times "in my absence to officiate in that Department" adding "and I need not say that his pay - military and civil is quite inadequate".² And in 1831 he stresses under what difficult "having quitted home when almost boys, with no superiors to look up to, circumstances his officials have to act, in a backward country "where no equals to associate with, no public opinion to regard", such men had only the facility of "measuring themselves among themselves and comparing themselves among themselves".⁴ The only factor in Scott's favour was that he had at his command a band of carefully selected and very devoted subordinates. He commanded their respect and affection⁵ and in return did all he could to secure recognition and reward for their merits. If John Lawrence offered the tempting prospect of early promotion to his subordinates⁶, Scott constantly pressed their achievements upon the attention of the Supreme Government and their claims

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 54, Scott to Swinton, 21 Apr. 1830.

2 B.P.C. 28 May 1830, no. 82, Neufville to Scott, 17 Apr. 1830.

3 See supra, p. 121.

4 Calcutta Review, vol. 19, 1853, p. 423. Assam since the expulsion of the Burmese.

5 This can be gathered from some of the correspondence between Scott and his friends appended at the end of White's Memoir. Scott's lasting friendship with his associates in Assam administration can also be discerned from the following fact : In December, 1831, the friends of the late Lts. Bedingfield and Burlton of Bengal Artillery and Beadon, assistant surgeon, Bengal establishment, sought permission to inscribe a tablet on the tomb which was to be erected by the government, to the memory of David Scott. See B.P.C. 23 July, 1832, no. 116, White to Swinton, 22 Dec. 1831.

6 See M. Edwardes, op.cit., pp. 131-132.

for increased allowances. Thus in 1821 he is found pressing Kishen Kant Bose's claim to an increase after his successful journey to Bhutan and extolling the value of his "Account of Bhutan", and grammar and vocabulary of the Bhutan language.¹ In 1824, while acknowledging his own liberal treatment as political agent, he points out that Captain Davidson has at times "in my absence to officiate in that Department" adding "and I need not say that his pay - military and civil is quite inadequate".² And in 1831 he stresses under what difficult circumstances his officials have to act, in a backward country "where boats continue to be made from the trunk of trees, where the use of saw, a wheel carriage or even a beast of burden is unknown, where the natives cannot make marketable butter, sugar or oil, and where half of a rich soil, capable of producing every article of tropical growth lies waste and is considered absolutely worthless from ignorance of the means of making use of it".³ Unhappily most of Scott's earlier associates in the conquest and administration of Assam were lost to him. Bedingfield and Burlton, who were engaged in the survey of the Khasi hills and were in charge of the building of the road and the sanatoria, Beadon the assistant surgeon who had been looking after his health since he first fell ill in February 1827⁴, Brodie, the young officer conducting so gallantly the military operations against the rebellious Khasis⁵, and Neufville in whose safe hands he could leave the

1 B.C. Vol. 810/21724, pp. 12-13. Scott to Swinton, 21 Sept. 1821.

2 B.S.P.C. 22 Oct. 1824, no. 12, Scott to Swinton, 1 Oct. 1824.

3 B.P.C. 10 June 1831, no. 50, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 18 May, 1831.

4 B.P.C. 16 March 1827, no. 57, Scott to Swinton, 14 Feb. 1827.

5 See supra, p. 216.

whole administrative burden of Upper Assam for no less than four years - all fell a victim to the hostile climate of the frontier.

A second aspect of Scott's administration and one which might seem rather at variance with his wish to conserve Indian institutions, was his interest in Christian missions. Stokes has contrasted the "expansive and aggressive attitude" towards Indian society displayed by the Utilitarians and Evangelicals and the paternalist conservatism of the Munro school. With that school Scott obviously had much in common, yet in 1825 he appealed to the Supreme Government to bring missionaries to the Garo hills, which he presented as a most promising field for conversion.¹ Scott's early and long maintained relationship with William Carey has already been noticed²; in his last few years he had also been in close contact with Colonel Adam White, who in 1822 had published a book, Consideration on the State of British India, which reveals him as a staunch supporter of missionaries.³ Again, since Scott had entered the service, there had been a steady change in the Company's avowed policy towards the missionaries from an early indifference or hostility to that acceptance which received legal expression in ^{the} Charter Act of 1813.⁴ To that changing climate of opinion Scott had, of course, been exposed.

¹ M. Edwardes, Asia in the European Age, p. 109.

² Ibid.

¹ See Scott's letter to Bayley, 27 Apr. 1825, quoted in A. Mackenzie, op.cit., p. 253 n.

² See supra, pp. 13-14.

³ See A. White, Consideration on the State of British India, pp. 26-35.

⁴ See M. Edwardes, Asia in the European Age, 1498-1955, pp. 108-115.

⁶ E. Stokes, op.cit., p. 29.

The ideas of those Evangelicals who effected the change in the Company's official policy have been set out by Stokes and by Embree.¹ Their basic concept was that the character of man was a product, not of his physical, but of his moral environment, and that salvation could be achieved and the individual could be totally transformed by a direct assault on the mind.² Education followed by personal conversion would change the whole nature of society. This emerged from the essential Protestant belief that Europe's progress was a direct result of the liberation of the individual, the legacy of the Reformation.³ Their logical conclusion was that for India to progress, her people must undergo a similar liberation, an assimilation on the deepest level.⁴

In Scott's appeal for missionary help, and in his own support of mission work⁵ however, it is difficult to find that "consuming earnestness and conviction, born of a transfiguring religious experience", which Stokes thinks⁶ to have been the hallmark of the Evangelical mind. While he had been directly engaged in the settlement of Garo affairs, investigating relations between the hill chiefs and the plains zamindars, regulating the cotton markets, applying the

1 A.T. Embree, Charles Grant and British Rule in India, p. 141.

2 E. Stokes, op.cit., pp. 30-31.

3 M. Edwardes, Asia in the European Age, p. 109.

4 Ibid.

5 Scott took a keen interest in the activities of the Serampore Mission. The Periodical Accounts of the Serampore Mission for 1827 and 1828 show that he was one of the highest donors to this mission.

Scott and Charles Metcalfe paid an annual subscription of Rs. 200 which was only second to that of one R. Hume who paid Rs. 250. See P.A.S.M., 1819-1834, pp. 69-72, Account for the year 1828.

6 E. Stokes, op.cit., p. 29.

necessary measure of coercion to bring the Garo chiefs¹ - some hundred and fifty five by November 1822 - to commit themselves to written agreements and accept a nominal tribute to the permanent British power², he had not once called for missionary assistance. Rather when he was first called to attend to the Burmese threat, he had relied upon the appointment of one or two native superintendents with an appropriate staff, working with the neighbouring police daroghas over whom they exercised a controlling authority to exercise that administrative authority created by Regulation X of 1822.³ It was only after he had left the Garo hills for Assam that, perhaps under the influence of White, or from a consciousness of his own precarious health, that he appealed for missionary help in settling and civilizing the Garos. It was on 27 April, 1825, that Scott wrote to the Supreme Government asking permission to negotiate with Bishop Heber at Calcutta for such

1 The chiefs were not powerful or organised enough to use as instruments of British control, as the Rajmahal chiefs had been and Scott reported that "unless compelled by a military force few of the class would at present submit to any very direct interference in the internal affairs, as they have no regular constitutional authorities, by gaining over whom we might manage the rest".

B.C.J.C. 27 Sept. 1816, no. 47, Scott's Report, 20 Aug. 1816.

2 B.C.J.C. 17 Feb. 1825, no. 9, Scott to Bayley, 3 Dec. 1824.

3 The proposed establishment and its expenses were : of the

Superintendent (one)	-	Rs. 80
----------------------	---	--------

Muharrir and interpreters	-	28
---------------------------	---	----

Jamadar and peons	-	38
-------------------	---	----

Office contingent	-	4
-------------------	---	---

		Rs. 150.
--	--	----------

1 Scott to Bayley, 27 Apr. 1825, quoted in A. Mackenzie, op.cit., pp. 253-254 n.

2 See B.C.J.C. 17 Feb. 1825, no. 9, Scott to Bayley, 3 Dec. 1824.

assistance. "I am satisfied", he said, "that nothing permanently good can be obtained by other means, and that if we do not interfere on behalf of the poor Garos they will soon become Hindoos or half Hindoos, retaining and acquiring many of the bad parts of both their present and improved creeds. I would greatly prefer two or more Moravian Missionaries of the old school who along with religion would teach useful arts". Indeed, Scott became so much interested in the missionary activities that he showed readiness to personally support the missionary venture. "If Government would ensure them subsistence only in the case of success or of my death", Scott wrote, "I would willingly take upon myself the expense in the first instance, and £300 per annum would suffice".¹ Inspired by a vision of the vast field for conversion existing in the Garo hills, he pleaded. "Of success I have no doubt than that, if allowed, you could make Christians of the Hindoo boys; and the great error of the Missionaries appears to me to be that of directing their attention to polished natives instead of rude tribes who are still in that state of national childhood which enables the stranger priest to enact the schoolmaster and to teach them what he likes. There are many instances of success in cases of the latter description in modern times, but not one by fair means in those of the former since the age of miracle or very near it".²

1 Scott to Bayley, 27 Apr. 1825, quoted in A. Mackenzie, *op.cit.*, pp. 253-254 n.

2 Ibid. O'Malley, *History of the Garo Hills and the West*, p. 734.

2 B.C.J.C. 25 Oct. 1825, and Scott to H. Shakespear, 4 Oct. 1827.

in their In pointing out the tribal areas as the best place for missionary activities, Scott has proved very far sighted for it is only in the tribal areas that christianity in India spread most, and with some remarkable results in some parts. As it stands today "one-half of the Lushais and one fifth of the Mundas and Oraons" are christians.¹ About the advantages offered to the Missionaries by the tribal areas Scott wrote in 1827 : "While judging from the experience of the past and the lights of history we may with reason infer that both the Hindoos and Mohamedans of this country have long ago passed that stage of society in which the religion of a people can be changed by other means than the use of the sword. Numerous examples are to be found of this revolution being effected by force of persuasion alone, amongst tribes similarly situated with the Garos, and where, although the missionary may encounter the dangers of the forests and the unwholesome climate of an uncleared country he has not to contend against the unbending, prejudices of a full grown political body, and the powerful influence of a priesthood to which the multitude have from infancy been accustomed to listen with implicit belief".²

To Scott's letter, asking for money to run a Garo mission, Bayley, the secretary to the government eventually replied, demi-officially, with general approval. But he pointed out that "the government could not, however, give a salary to the people who might be employed.

1 L.S.S. O'Malley, Modern India and the West, p. 734. in the first

2 B.C.J.C. 25 Oct. 1827, no. 54, Scott to H. Shakespear, 4 Oct. 1827.

2 J.L.B., vol. 44 letter of 30 Aug. 1827, para 141.

3 Ibid, para 142.

in their capacity of Missionaries, but they might call them school-masters, and give assistance in that shape".¹ The aid thus offered Scott gladly accepted, and the scheme for the education of the Garos which he proposed with the advice of Bishop Heber was accepted by the Calcutta authorities in August 1827.² A school was established at Goalpara for the education of forty Garo boys at a monthly expense of 450 rupees.³

School master -	Rs. 200
Native assistants -	50
Expenses of 40 boys 4 Rs. each	160
Servants and contingencies	<u>40</u>
	Rs. 450.

The whole scheme might seem an example of Evangelicalism at work, with the Garos seen as souls to be saved from the evils of Hinduism by a missionary effort, directed in the first place to education. But the lengthy memorandum in which, in July 1827, Scott sketched his ideal mission station, reveals some unexpected and very idiosyncratic ideas.

Scott had selected for a mission station the Rangeera mountain, which, being detached from the other hills and eighteen hundred feet high, enjoyed a climate moderately cool throughout the year, and a free circulation of the air. The station was planned to be self-supporting. A part of the hill would be cleared, in the first

1 A. Mackenzie, op.cit., p. 254 n.

2 J.L.B., vol. 41 letter of 30 Aug. 1827, para 141.

3 Ibid, para 142.

instance, by inducing the neighbouring Garos to cultivate cotton and rice upon it; as they were obliged to abandon their fields after the second year in the existing rude state of agriculture, it would be necessary to adopt measures for preventing the jungles from again springing up after the expiration of that period; at least twenty to thirty rupees would be given in advance for this purpose to each of the fifty Garo families, and they would be allowed to retain the use of the money so long as they continued to cultivate for their own benefit lands pointed out to them in the neighbourhood of the missionary settlement; they would be asked to work two or three days in the week in clearing jungle, and making embankments and other improvements tending to increase the salubrity of the station and the produce of their own lands; a herd of two hundred cows, and the like number of sheep and goats would be purchased and the summit of the hill would thus be stocked with cattle down to a height of about three hundred feet; in the region below, in which springs and rivulets begin to abound and where consequently the system of irrigation practised in China, Bhutan, and elsewhere might be successfully introduced; the scholars would be taught in the art of the new system of agriculture and would be inspired to extend it to their own villages; the artificial project for irrigation would be undertaken for agricultural improvement and the cold weather cultivation of wheat, barley, potatoes, turnips etc. would be introduced; plenty of rich arable land fit for the plough ^{would} be procured at the bottom; and many of the rivulets towards the lower part of their course would be used in a manner to turn

mills for clearing cotton and paddy.¹ Of such a mission agricultural settlement Scott declared, "no improvement of equal magnitude whether of European or Asiatic origin could be introduced into the hills" - and he pointed out its administrative and political advantage : "from a migratory, it would convert the Garos into a stationary population".² He then set out the cost of the scheme in detail : six thousand rupees for the initial clearance³, and eight thousand four hundred rupees in annual charges⁴, easily defrayed from the revenue surplus yielded by

1 B.C.J.C. 26 June 1828, no. 10, Scott's Memorandum of the arrangements for a Missionary station and an experimental farm, 10 July 1827.

2 Ibid.

3 Advances to the Garo cultivators for two years	-	Rs.	500
Advances to 50 families to settle permanently	-		1,500
To the purchase of cattle	-		1,300
Agricultural instruments, tools, plough,	-		700
Buildings	-		2,000
		Rs.	6,000

See B.C.J.C. 26 June 1828, no. 10, enclosure D of Scott's letter, 10 July 1827.

4 Missionary salary	-	Rs.	250
Mr. Hurly's (of Garo school) do	-		200
Native teachers	-		40
40 boys at 3	-		120
Servants etc.	-		40
Allowance to Garo priests	-		39,50
		Rs.	700
Deduct expenses annually chargeable to the Garo mountaineers in judicial, revenue and police establishments	-		34,210
Annual charges	-	Rs.	8,400

See B.C.J.C. 26 June 1828, no. 10, enclosure C of Scott's letter, 10 July 1827.

2 B.C.J.C. 26 June 1828, no. 10, Scott to Shakespeare, 10 July 1827.

the Garo hills.¹ Finally having explained what type of missionary was required - well qualified in "various European improvements in agriculture mechanics and the arts" - he ended with a personal plea, "...adverting to the very precarious state of my own health, I would earnestly solicit that His Lordship-in-Council will be pleased to adopt as soon as convenient such further measures as may be requisite to afford to the Garos instruction in Christian religion as constituting independently of other constructions, by far the most feasible and efficacious means of humanizing that race of people and effecting the objects which Government has all along had in view in regard to them".²

On 10 September, 1827, B.W. Hurly who had been selected as school master for the Garos, submitted his resignation, pleading his inability to cope with the savage and unhealthy surroundings, "destitute of the common necessities of European life", and a like inability either to master the Bengali and Garo languages or to give lessons on

1 Statement exhibiting the proceeds of the Garo market duties since the enactment of Regulation X of 1822.

In the year 1822/23	-	Rs. 33,285
1823/24	-	50,471
1824/25	-	54,471
1825/26	-	22,554
1826/27	-	36,013
Average of five years	-	39,358
Deduct expenses annually chargeable to the Garo mountaineers in judicial, revenue and police establishments	-	34,210
Remaining annual surplus	-	Rs. 5,148

See B.C.J.C. 28 June 1828, no. 10, enclosures A and B of Scott's letter, 10 July 1827.

2 B.C.J.C. 26 June 1828, no. 10, Scott to Shakespear, 10 July 1827.

husbandry and horticulture to the tribes.¹ The aggrieved Scott made it clear that men of a different quality would be needed. "An ardent zeal in the cause of religion is of course a sine-qua-non", he wrote, "and unless that is possessed in a sufficient degree to place a man above the inferior considerations of enjoyment of society and the many little comforts to which Europeans are accustomed, ultimate success cannot be expected".² He pointed out that on the Rangeera station "moderate sized, comfortable homes will be provided, the necessaries or even luxuries of the table, need not be wanting and a constant communication by post may be kept up, but beyond this little can be reasonably expected, and compensation for lost enjoyments and the privation of other advantages can only be sought for with success in the zealous prosecution of the objects of the Mission, and in the cheering prospect of conveying the blessings of civilization and a knowledge of the true faith to thousands of beings at present immersed in ignorance and imbued with the most savage propensities".³ He ended say, as Charles Grant, who denounced that "crafty and imperious priesthood" as the source of most ills in Hindu society. Scott proved as one of an arduous nature, and to which a man ought to go forth equally ready to make use of them in Assam, for in 1826 he requested the Supreme Government to sanction considerable land grants to the brethren in Greenland and still actuates the missionaries in the wilds of southern Africa".⁴

1 B.C.J.C. 25 Oct. 1827, no. 55, Scott to Shakespear, 4 Oct. 1827.

2 B.C.J.C. 25 Oct. 1827, no. 54, Scott to Shakespear, 4 Oct. 1827.

3 B.C.J.C. 25 Oct. 1827, nos. 54-56, Scott to Shakespear, 4 Oct. 1827.

3 Ibid.

4 B.C.J.C. 17 Feb. 1825, no. 9, Scott to Bayley, 3 Dec. 1824;

Allen and others, op.cit., p. 511.

3 J.L.B. vol. 11, letter of 30 Aug. 1827, para 146.

4 E. Stokes, op.cit., p. 32.

One odd feature of Scott's plans for the Garo mission, and one which suggests the Paternalist rather than the Evangelical, was his suggestion for medical instruction. He wished for the appointment of a well-trained native doctor to the Rangeera mission, whose task would be to instruct the priests how to cure the simple diseases of the country, such as fever, rheumatism and inflammation of the eyes.¹ (Scott himself had successfully introduced vaccination against small pox, the value of which was so well understood that the Imperial Gazetteer reports that "small-pox has been almost stamped out in the hills"²). Scott argued that the priests were the only persons resorted to by the people in case of disease, and that if the priest's co-operation was won by the grant of small allowances, the way would be opened for the diffusion of an improved practice of medicine among the Garos.³

Scott's plan to use the Brahmins, and infact to strengthen their position suggests that he scarcely saw them in the same light, say, as Charles Grant, who denounced that "crafty and imperious priesthood" as the source of most ills in Hindu society.⁴ Scott proved equally ready to make use of them in Assam, for in 1826 he requested the Supreme Government to sanction considerable land grants to the pandits, whom he wished to use to revive education in Assam. He had found education at a very low ebb, the old Ahom system having been nobody's business since the days of the Burmese invasion and the younger

1 B.C.J.C. 25 Oct. 1827, nos. 54-56, Scott to Shakespear, 4 Oct. 1827.

2 B.C.J.C. 17 Feb. 1825, no. 9, Scott to Bayley, 3 Dec. 1824; B.C. Allen and others, op.cit., p. 511.

3 J.L.B. vol. 11, letter of 30 Aug. 1827, para 146.

4 E. Stokes, op.cit., p. 32.

generation having consequently received little or no education. If the government was to find capable men for its service the situation required immediate attention.¹ Scott therefore proposed that six hundred puras (1800 bighas) should be assigned for the support of pandits or schoolmasters, in Lower Assam. Under the recently introduced system these lands would pay some six hundred rupees revenue a year : this he proposed to remit in return for service as schoolmasters. The custom of the country had been to make such grants to individuals, resumable on the death of the grantee or upon his ceasing to perform the duty.² Scott proposed to allot from twenty to fifty puras of land, in twelve or more convenient situations, to pandits who would then be required to teach a specified number of pupils, upon pain of resumption of the grant. Such payment in land rather than cash would be "much less onerous to the government and would prevent a good deal of trouble in the transmission to distant parts of the country of the schoolmasters' salaries, while it would be more congenial to the habits of

1 The language taught in Scott's newly-established schools was Bengali. He believed that it differed very little from Assamese; it was obviously well suited to the administrative needs; it was already the language of the Assamese intelligentsia (B.P.C. 25 Oct. 1826, nos. 21-22, Scott to Swinton, 9 Oct. 1826, Swinton to Scott, 25 Oct. 1826). Another probable reason for introducing Bengali was that the intelligentsia of the Assam of his time having had their higher education in Bengal, were already well versed in Bengali. Jugyuram Phookan's translations of English prose and poetry into Bengali had already caught the eye of the intelligentsia of Bengal, and the 'literary exertions' of Haliram Dhekial Phookan, who had written a history of Assam in Bengali had already been highly acclaimed by the Bengali press. (see Asiatic Journal, vol. 7, 1832, p. 84, Progress of the Arts in Assam; M.C.L.R.M., vol. 12, 1819, pp. 19-20, Eighth Memoir Respecting the Translations and Editions of the Sacred Scriptures. Conducted by the Serampore Missionaries. no. 17 The Assamese).

2 B.P.C. 25 Sept. 1826, no. 19, Scott to Swinton, 25 July 1826.

the people and past customs of the country".¹

Since government had already showed its interest in his Evangelical spirit.² One of the chief objects of the Evangelical educational plans², Scott went on to propose that these schoolmasters missionaries was to secure from the government the disconnection of the should be put under^{the} superintendence of the chaudhuries and other British power from the support of temples and Hindu and Muslim religious festivals. Scott took a very different line, for when a tax proper number of pupils was being taught. As overall superintendent he wanted a pandit of more than ordinary acquirements who would visit the government, in July, 1827, the appropriateness of a government grant.² This the authorities seemed reluctant to allow, but in September made by them. It was also arranged to send down an intelligent Assamese Scott wrote again pointing out that grants for Burga Puja had always to Serampore with a view of getting him instructed in the mode of been made by the Ahoms, and had been increased by the Burmese. He continued to disburse Rs. 1,121 a year for the purpose. In 1831 to meet teaching & lately introduced in the neighbourhood of Calcutta.³

It is true that Scott also sought missionary assistance, and through the veteran William Carey in 1829 he secured the aid of James Rae, ordained at Serampore.⁴ Scott was anxious to establish a school for native girls at Gauhati, and this work he placed in the hands of Rae and his wife.⁵ But his appeal for missionary help seems to have sprung quite as much from his appreciation of the educational problem, as from desire to see the Gospel taught. It was in no Evangelical frame of mind that he called upon Serampore to supplement the work of his Assamese pandits.

1 B.P.C. 25 Oct. 1826, no. 21, Scott to Swinton, 9 Oct. 1826.

2 B.P.C. 15 Sept. 1826, no. 20, Swinton to Scott, 15 Sept. 1826.

3 B.P.C. 25 Oct. 1826, nos. 21-22, Scott to Swinton, 9 Oct. 1826, Swinton to Scott, 25 Oct. 1826.

4 V.H. Sword, Baptists in Assam, pp. 36-37.

5 Calcutta Review, 1853, vol. 19, pp. 427-430.

By subsidising the Nilachal temple of Kamrup, Scott further showed how little affected his own religious beliefs were by the Evangelical spirit. One of the chief objects of the Evangelical missionaries was to secure from the government the disconnexion of the British power from the support of temples and Hindu and Muslim religious festivals.¹ Scott took a very different line, for when a tax upon pilgrims to the temple proved unproductive, he pressed upon government, in July, 1827, the appropriateness of a government grant.² This the authorities seemed reluctant to allow³, but in September Scott wrote again pointing out that grants for Durga Puja had always been made by the Ahoms, and had been increased by the Burmese. He continued to disburse Rs. 1,121 a year for the purpose.⁴ In 1831 to meet government objections, he proposed an alternative, "If Government had however any objection to the charge for the expenses of the temple appearing in the public accounts", he wrote, "this might be carried by relinquishing, and appropriating to that purpose the revenue, levied at present on the temple paikes and lands which amounts to Rs. 1002 per annum".⁵

1 E. Stokes, op.cit., p. 24.
 2 B.S.P.C. 17 Aug. 1827, no. 44, Scott to Swinton, 28 July 1827.
 3 B.S.P.C. 17 Aug. 1827, no. 45, Swinton to Scott, 17 Aug. 1827.
 4 B.S.P.C. 26 Oct. 1827, no. 17, Scott to Swinton, 12 Sept. 1827.
 5 B.S.P.C. 29 Apr. 1831, nos. 36-37, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 16 Apr. 1831.

2 See supra, p. 12.

3 See E. Stokes, op.cit., pp. 37-47.

The third marked features of Scott's attitude to the whole question of moral and material progress is his interest in very practical improvements in the agriculture¹ and handicrafts of the frontier peoples. Scott being the nephew of Director David Scott² it might be thought that if he was not very close to the Evangelicals he was perhaps to be identified with those free-trade interests³ who in the early nineteenth century became increasingly interested in opening Indian markets to British manufactures and in educating and reshaping Indian society so as to raise the purchasing power of the Indian population. But there is little more evidence that Scott wished to refashion and anglicize Indian society for commercial than for religious ends. His was a paternalist concern for those under his charge, and a keen personal interest in the mechanic and scientific arts.

Thus in dealing with the Garos one of Scott's earliest concerns was with the orderly marketing of hill cotton, and at a later date he is found recommending that money be spent upon clearing obstructions from the beds of the small rivers leading from the Garo

1 Scott's interest in agriculture may have been due to a tradition of agricultural pursuits in his mother's family for in Epitaphs and Inscriptions from Burial Grounds and Old Buildings in the North East of Scotland the following sentences, about Scott's maternal grandfather, Dr. Chalmers, are very significant: "He was passionately fond of agricultural pursuits, and he is said to have devoted quite as much time and attention to the cultivation of his farm at Selattie as to the discharge of his Accademical duties. In Kaye's curious print of "The Sapiant Septemviri" he is represented in the act of addressing his colleagues in these words : 'Agriculture is the noblest of sciences, mind your glebes - the Emperor of China is a farmer'." See A. Jervise, op.cit., pp. 393-395.

2 See supra, p. 12.

3 See E. Stokes, op.cit., pp. 37-47.

hills into Rangpur, and upon the making of a track way along the southern bank of the Brahmaputra. (Government granted up to fifteen hundred rupees for the former and five thousand for the latter)¹. His very detailed plans for the introduction of European crops, and the establishment of herds of cattle and pigs in the Khasi hills have been noted in chapter VI. His hopes of trade from Assam into Burma, and his diplomatic and financial efforts to foster it have also been reviewed,² as have the practical aspects of his proposals for a mission station in the Garo hills. One other example, from Assam, will serve to show how concerned he was to see local resources exploited, and how tenacious in pursuit of his schemes.

In April 1830 Scott applied to the Calcutta authorities for the urgent adoption of measures to improve the general resources of Assam.³ He pointed out that commerce was depressed and the currency deficient, for there was a constant drain of the small existing stock of coin remittance to the Presidency. Improvement could only be achieved, he argued, "by encouraging the production of commodities fit for exportation, and by substituting on the part of government for a remittance of the surplus revenue in cash, an investment of the produce of the district".⁴ In the early stage of British occupation, Scott had been under the impression that the abolition of commercial restrictions which he had eventually brought about and the influx of capital from Bengal, would gradually remove the evils complained of. But to his

1 J.L.B. 26 July 1826, vol. 9, para 167-169.

2 Chapter IV (I). 1826, no. 44, Scott to Swinton, 18 Sept. 1826.

3 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 17 Apr. 1830.

4 Ibid.

utter surprise, five years' experience had showed that no improvement could be expected from the unassisted efforts of the Assamese. Then again, the want of enterprise amongst the Bengali capitalists and the exhorbitant rate of interest which led them to prefer the trade of usurers to "making any advance of cash in those less immediately profitable speculations" had compelled Scott to think about other measures of achieving his objects.¹

He pointed out that Assam was an agricultural not a manufacturing country, and that with a peasant population there could be no great market for rice and such crops. Moreover, owing to the want of boats and the navigational difficulties of the Brahmaputra, "no relief from the evils" could be expected from the exportation of so cheap and bulky a commodity as grain. Scott therefore argued forcefully that unless means were immediately adopted by government to encourage the production of the more costly articles of export such as raw silk and muga* in particular, it would soon become necessary either to reduce materially the amount of the scanty revenue at present derived from the districts or to revert to the former system of compulsory labour.²

Scott had in fact been pressing for the development of the Assam silk industry since 1826. In that year he had sent some specimens of Assam silk pieces to Calcutta for study by the Board of Trade. He

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 17 Apr. 1830.

* See supra, p. 110n.

2 B.P.C. 13 Oct. 1826, no. 44, Scott to Swinton, 18 Sept. 1826.

4 Ibid.

had also urged that the Assamese be instructed in the most modern methods of winding their silk and that the machinery in use in Rangpur should be introduced into Assam. He considered that the muga silk was likely to become the most important article of export from Assam for Asiatic consumption and with reference to its well-known superior strength and durability, he found it highly probable that it might capture the European market too.¹ But on receipt of an unfavourable reply² from the Board of Trade the plan was pronounced unprofitable by the government. In bringing up the issue again in 1830, Scott reminded the government that he had initiated the plan not with a view to commercial profit, but in hopes that the measures would benefit the inhabitants, and ultimately increase the revenue of the district under his charge.³ He again urged a trial of his plans, "although they may in the first instance involve some trifling outlay on the part of the state, and even although it should appear that the more immediate and direct pecuniary return for such outlay will accrue rather to its subjects than to government itself".⁴

which of Scott had specific reasons for directing his attention specially towards the development of raw silk. He wrote: "Although the soil and climate of Assam is well adapted to the production of articles raised in Bengal, I shall confine my observations to the single commodity of raw silk both because it does not necessarily

1 B.P.C. 13 Oct. 1826, no. 44, Scott to Swinton, 18 Sept. 1826.

2 B.P.C. 30 Dec. 1826, no. 66, George Udny and Mackenzie to Lord Combermer, Vice President-in-Council, 14 Dec. 1826.

3 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 17 Apr. 1830.

4 Ibid.

require continued European superintendence to bring it to perfection and because the inhabitants of Assam are already so universally acquainted with the analogous operation of winding the silk called moogah that there is every reason to think that they would soon become competent to prepare the ordinary raw silk in a manner superior to that which can be expected from the cotton clothed natives of Bengal, among whom the art of rearing silk worms and the subsequent treatment of the produce was by no means so generally known and where it is indeed still in a great measure confined to a particular class".¹

The ultimate commercial value of the trade for the Company was also not ruled out. Scott went on to point out "it is very necessary to keep in mind that the Assamese are already like the Chinese, chiefly clad in a species of silk which although not of a description known to be suited to the European market is nevertheless prepared in a manner entirely similar to that sort, so that any person acquainted with the mode of winding the one is competent, with a little practice, to perform the same operation on the other, under which circumstances it is not perhaps expecting too much to suppose that many of the inhabitants will engage in the preparation of the real silk if ^{Government were} to render available to agricultural purposes land which is not at present considered worth cultivating and of which there are large tracts unoccupied merely for the want of any suitable article of culture".²

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 17 Apr. 1830.

2 Ibid.

"MacInty With this end in view Scott presented a three point plan to the government. First, plantations of the mulberry should be prepared at the expense of government in favourable situations in Assam. The inhabitants could thus be taught the plantation method of mulberry cultivation, for mass production of silk worms. Secondly, the people should be instructed in the improved mode of winding silk, reels of a proper description being prepared in the country and distributed to those who would undertake to rear silk worms and to use the apparatus for winding the muga silk. Finally, when progress had been sufficient to warrant the measure, a small commercial Residency should be established, superintended by the medical officer at Gauhati, with a view, not so much to securing an immediate profit on the investment, but to create a steady demand for the silk.¹ To effect the first two objects Scott conceived that an outlay of from twelve to fifteen thousand rupees would be required. If government was not prepared to laying out such a sum, then Scott suggested that an extra cess should be levied upon the inhabitants. "The trifling additional burden to which the people would thus be individually subjected", Scott assured^{the government,} "would be speedily and amply repaid by the increased value of the land and by the introduction of an article of exchangeable value so much wanted at present to enable them to provide for the payment of revenue".²

Scott's proposals were discussed again in official and business circles and expert opinions were called for from firms like

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 51, Scott to Swinton, 17 Apr. 1830.

2 Ibid.

"MacIntyre and Co " and "Palmer and Co ".¹ The experts appreciated the quality of the Assam silk but about its immediate commercial value they were not so sure.² This again discouraged the government. But Scott was tenacious. He pointed out to the government that such plans ought to be undertaken if they really wanted prosperity in Assam. He also reminded them that "the perfection of manufacture of raw silk in Bengal was not attended but at a considerable expense and trouble, Italian artificers* having been brought out to teach the native spinners".³ In arguing further, Scott reminded the government of its duty to its subjects and the folly it would commit in failing to encourage such a plan. He said : "Where the interest of Government in promoting agricultural improvements is so direct and obvious as it is in a country situated like Assam, blessed with a fertile soil and favourable climate, but at the same time labouring under an almost hopeless state of penury from ignorance of or inattention to the measures of benefitting by those advantages, it will seem to be a most imperfect system of policy that would reject all certain obvious methods of improving the resources of the country and increasing the

1 B.P.C. 7 May 1830, no. 52, Swinton's note on the market value of Assam silk - the sample of which was sent by Scott, 7 May 1830.

2 Ibid.

* The advantages of the Italian method over that of the country was said to be very evident. The experiment had been made at Kashimbazar factory under the supervision of 'Wiss and Robinson'. See Bengal Public Consultation, vol. I R. 2 (25 May 1772), p. 325, Committee of Commerce Proceedings, 5 March 1772.

3 B.P.C. 29 Oct. 1830, no. 36, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 6 Oct. 1830.

4 B.P.C. 29 Oct. 1830, no. 37, Chief Secretary to Scott, 29 Oct. 1830.

revenue of government".¹ Scott charged the government with "a continued reliance that the need will be met by private individuals although that expectation has been contradicted by experience of sixty years in Bengal".²

He referred to "the recent change in the state of the British silk trade", which made it particularly necessary "to adopt every practicable means to increase the quantity of raw silk imported and to lower the price". He then placed before the authorities yet one more proposal, that a grant of ten thousand bighas of land fit for cultivation of the mulberry and other dry crops, to be held rent free in perpetuity, should be offered to any individual, European or native, who would invest one lakh of rupees in mulberry plantation and the establishment in Assam of silk filatures on the Italian model. In taking such a step, Scott declared, the government would, in reality, sacrifice nothing, since land of that sort was mostly unassessed and uncultivated.³

The government acknowledged with pleasure "the laudable spirit of zeal" which prompted Scott to offer the suggestions, but remained reluctant to sanction any outlay in establishing a silk filature in Assam and also averse to the sanction of any increased cess⁴ on the people.⁵ However it did ask for a modification of Scott's plan with

1 B.P.C. 29 Oct. 1830, no. 36, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 6 Oct. 1830.

2 Ibid.

3 B.P.C. 29 Oct. 1830, no. 37, Chief Secretary to Scott, 29 Oct. 1830.

4 Ibid.

5 See supra, p. 233

6 B.P.C. 29 Oct. 1830, no. 37, Chief Secretary to Scott, 29 Oct. 1830.

B.C. Allen, op.cit., pp. 1-10.

7 B.P.C. 20 May 1831, no. 38, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 30 Apr. 1831.

regard to granting of a rent free tenure in perpetuity or for a given period of years. A moderate proportion of land on conditions likely to be more acceptable to speculators - native or European - than the outlay of so large a capital was suggested by the government.¹ During the remaining period of Scott's career nothing was heard about such modified plans, but Scott continued to take a keen interest in instructing the Assamese through experts from Bengal, in modern devices for manufacturing raw silk.² Only four months before his death he submitted another novel plan of experimenting on a small scale with the manufacture of raw silk by means of convicts from the silk districts of Bengal. He suggested that such a measure would not involve any extra charge to the government and he requested therefore, that the magistrates of the silk districts should be instructed to place at his disposal any prisoners in their jails acquainted with the art of winding silk.³

These prolonged discussions over the development of an Assamese silk industry, pressed with vigour and tenacity, are very revealing. Scott's whole career, from the early days when he attracted attention by the ability and zeal displayed in opening communications with Bhutan and Tibet down to his death as first sole commissioner of Assam, had been spent upon the North East Frontiers of India. During three decades the Indian government had placed ever increasing reliance

1 B.P.C. 29 Oct. 1830, no. 37, Chief Secretary to Scott, 29 Oct. 1830.

2 Scott introduced from Rangpur reelers, reels and plants of the morus alba and established a factory at Darrang with the object of extending the cultivation of the pat or mulberry-reared silk worm, and of improving the reeling of the muga worm.
B.C. Allen, op.cit., pp. 1-10.

3 B.P.C. 20 May 1831, no. 38, Scott to the Chief Secretary, 30 Apr. 1831.

APPENDIX

upon his ability and judgement and had continuously laid larger and heavier burdens upon his shoulders. Scott, for his part, had showed an increasing understanding and affection of the people he was called upon to administer. He noted and accepted the good in Indian society, he was unwilling needlessly to change, though, as over the prospects for Assam silk, he could be passionate in pursuing improvement. He ended, as many of the great administrators did, by identifying himself with the interests and the good of the people under him, by being truly paternalist.

20th August 1831, aged 45 years and 3 months. This monument is erected by order of the Supreme Government, as a public and lasting record of its consideration for the personal character of the deceased, and of its estimation of the eminent services rendered by him in the administration of the extensive territory committed to his charge. By his demise the Government has been deprived of a most zealous, able and intelligent servant, whose loss it deeply laments, while his name will long be held in grateful remembrance and veneration by the native population, to whom he was justly endeared by his impartial dispensation of justice, his kind and conciliatory manners and his constant and unwearied endeavours to promote their happiness and welfare.

1. Holmes and Co., The Bengal Obituary or A record to perpetuate the memory of the Departed Worth, inscription in the tomb at Cherrapunji, p. 369; see Bengal Past and Present, vol. V and Asiatic Journal, vol. 7, 1832, for the photograph of the monument at Cherrapunji and other obituary notes.

APPENDIX

Epitaph on the government-built tomb of David Scott at Cherrapunji.

IN MEMORY

North-East

of David Scott, Agent to the Governor-General of the Frontier of Bengal, and Commissioner of Revenue and Circuit in the Districts of Assam, North-Eastern part of Rangpur, Sheerpore and Sylhet, died 20th August 1831, aged 45 years and 3 months. This monument is erected by order of the Supreme Government, as a public and lasting record of its consideration for the personal character of the deceased, and of its estimation of the eminent services rendered by him in the administration of the extensive territory committed to his charge. By his demise the Government has been deprived of a most zealous, able and intelligent servant, whose loss it deeply laments, while his name will long be held in grateful remembrance and veneration by the native population, to whom he was justly endeared by his impartial dispensation of justice, his kind and conciliatory manners and his constant and unwearied endeavours to promote their happiness and welfare.¹

1 Holmes and Co., The Bengal Obituary or A record to perpetuate the memory of the Departed Worth, Inscription in the tomb at Cherrapunji, p. 369; see Bengal Past and Present, vol. V and Asiatic Journal, vol. 7, 1832, for the photograph of the monument at Cherrapunji and other obituary notes.

Board's Drafts of Secret Letters & Despatches to India

Vol. 6 1 Dec. BIBLIOGRAPHY 22 March 1827.

I. MANUSCRIPT SOURCES

Vols. 59; 70; 74; 80; 82; 83; 86; 89; 96; 99; 101; 103; 104; 105;
106; 107; 108; 110; 111; 112; 115; 116; 117; 118; 119; 120;
121; 122; 124.

A Records of the Commonwealth Relations Office.Bengal and India Secret and Political Letters

Vol. 4 3 January 1825 - 29 December 1826.

Vol. 5 5 January 1827 - 23 December 1831.

Vol. 6 3 April 1830 - 21 February 1832.

Judicial Letters from Bengal (Board's Copies), 1815 - 1832.Bengal Criminal Judicial Consultations, 1815 to 1828.Political Letters to Bengal.Bengal Political Consultations 1812 to 1834.

Vol. 10 April - July 1834.

Bengal Secret Letters

Vol. 1 10 March 1817 - 21 December 1819.

Vol. 2 6 July 1820 - 7 October 1820.

Vol. 3 13 January 1821 - 30 December 1824.

Bengal Secret and Political Consultations, 1824-1832.B. India Office Library Manuscripts.Board's Collection

Vols. 20904/770; 20905/771; 21724/810; 21861/819; 21862/819;
22971/868; 22982/869; 22983/870; 22984/871; 22985/872;
22986/873; 22987/874; 22988/875; 22989/876; 22990/877;
23504/899; 27123/956; 28562/ 1036; 40339/1234; 40340/1234;
40341/1234.

Board's Drafts of Secret Letters & Despatches to India

Vol. 6 1 December 1821 - 22 March 1827.

Despatches to Bengal

Vols. 69; 70; 74; 80; 82; 85; 86; 89; 96; 99; 101; 103; 104; 105;
106; 107; 108; 110; 111; 112; 115; 116; 117; 118; 119; 120;
121; 122; 124.

Home Miscellaneous Series

Vols. 614; 641; 644; 646; 648; 649; 650; 651; 653; 662; 663; 665;
666; 671; 673; 674; 678.

Judicial Letters from Bengal (Board's Copies), 1815 - 1832.Political Letters to Bengal

Vol. 9 1 February 1832 - 25 March 1831.
Vol. 10 April - July 1834.

Political Letters received from Bengal, from 1815 - 1830

Vols. 12 - 21.

Personal Records. Vol. XII.
B India Office Library Manuscripts.

Mss. Eur. D. 517 - Account of the Mountain Tribes on the
extreme N.E. Frontier of Bengal, by
J. McCosh, Civil Asst. Surgeon,
Goalpara.

Bentinck Papers

Pwff 2455 - 1827 - Minutes by Sir Thomas Munro on appoint-
ment of Native Judges.

- Mss. Eur. D. 517 - A short account of the Moa-Morah Sect,
and the country at present occupied
by the Bor Senapattee, by S.O. Hamay,
Capt. 40 Rgt. N.I. Asst. to
Commissioner of Assam. Subject of Lord
Ellenborough's expedition.
- PwJf 2545 - Climate of Chirra Punji, extracts from
a letter to Surveyor General of India,
from Dr. W. Rhodes to Capt. Jenkins,
Agent, Governor General, N.E. Frontier.
- PwJf 2657 - Memorandum upon the specimens of silk
and silk worms from Assam by
W. Prinsep Esquire. N.E. Frontier,
Yamaguchi, and Peking.
- PwJf 2707 - Notes on the Khasi Hills and peoples
by Lt. H. Yule, Bengal Engineers.
- PwJf 2736 - A History of Assam (at the end of a
volume containing an account of
George Bogle's visit to the Tishoo
Lama in Tibet, by J.P. Wade.
- Mss. Eur. D. 532 -
- PwJf 2792 -

Personal Records. Vol. XIX.

Writer's Petitions. Vol. 17, 1800 - 1802.

C In Nottingham University Library

Bentinck Papers

- PwJf 2455 - 1827 - Minutes by Sir Thomas Munro on appoint-
ment of Native Judges.

- PwJf 2473 - 1829 - Memo. on policy towards Native States.
- PwJf 2479 - 1829 - Extracts from Sir Charles Metcalfe's
Documents, Memoirs, and Works Minute of 11 Oct. 1829 in reply to
W.B's. letter on the subject of Lord
Ellenborough's question.
- Aitchison, Sir C.U. (ed) - A Collection of Treaties Engagements
and Sanads etc., vol. II, relating to
PwJf 2545 - 2549 - 1834 On discovery of Tea in Assam.
Burma, Nepal, Eastern Bengal and Assam,
Bhutan, Sikkim, Tibet, Siam and the
- PwJf 2657 - 1830 - Memo. on Government's policy towards
Native States.
- Allen, B.C. - Assam District Gazetteers,
PwJf 2707 - 1833 - Correspondence about N.E. Frontier,
Tenasserim coasts, and Penang.
Eastern Bengal and Assam.
(Imperial Gazetteer of India Series)
- PwJf 2736 - n.d. - Memorandum on changes in administration
of civil justice.
- Buchanan, C. - College of Fort William in Bengal.
PwJf 2791 - 1830 - Correspondence concerned with North
East Frontier.
- Buckland, C.E. - A Dictionary of Indian Biography.
PwJf 2840 - 1832 - Papers concerned with Assam.
- Clark, D. - The Regulations of the Government of
PwJf 2844 - 1832 - Reports by Capt. Jenkins on Assam and
Fort William in Bengal 1793-1833,
London, 1834.
- Dodwell, E. and Miles, J.S. - Alphabetical List of the East India
Company's Bengal Civil Servants,
1780-1838, London, 1839.

II PRINTED SOURCES

A Documents, Memoirs, and Works of Reference.

- Aitchison, Sir C.U. (ed) - A Collection of Treaties Engagements and Sanads etc., vol. II, relating to Burma, Nepal, Eastern Bengal and Assam, Bhutan, Sikkim, Tibet, Siam and the Eastern Archipelago. Calcutta 1909.
- Allen, B.C. - Assam District Gazetteers. Shillong, 1905-7.
- Allen, B.C. and others - Eastern Bengal and Assam, (Imperial Gazetteer of India Series) Calcutta, 1909.
- Buchanan, C. - College of Fort William in Bengal. London, 1805.
- Buckland, C.E. - A Dictionary of Indian Biography, London, 1906.
- Clark, R. - The Regulations of the Government of Fort William in Bengal 1793-1853, London, 1854.
- Dodwell, E. and Miles, J.S. - Alphabetical List of the East India Company's Bengal Civil Servants, 1780-1838, London, 1839.

- Dutt, K.N. - A Hand Book to the Old Records of Assam Secretariat, Shillong, 1959.
- Gait, Sir Edward - Report on the Progress of Historical Research in Assam, Shillong, 1897.
- Hodson, V.C.P. - Officers of the Bengal Army, 1758-1834 London, 1946.
- Wilson, H.H. - Documents Illustrative of the Burmese
- Holmes & Co. - The Bengal Obituary, Calcutta, 1848.
- Jervise, A. - Epitaphs and Inscriptions from Burial Grounds and Old Buildings in the North East of Scotland, Edinburgh, 1879.
- Mackenzie, A. - History of the Relations of the Government with the Hill Tribes of the North-East Frontier of Bengal, Calcutta, 1884. (in Bengali),
- Bhattacharya, J.M. (ed). - Ganhati, 1962.
- Nevill, H.R. - Gorakhpur, a Gazetteer, Allahabad, 1909. (author himself)
- Philips, C.H. - The Correspondence of David Scott Director and Chairman of the East India Company relating to Indian Affairs. 1787-1805, London, 1951.
- Bose, Baboo Kishen Kant - English by D. Scott. Subsequently in-
- Prinsep, H.T. - Register of the Hon'ble East India Company's Bengal Civil Servants, 1790-1842, Calcutta, 1844.
- Eden, Sir Ashley and others - Political Missions to Bootan,
- Sen, S.N. - Prachin Bangala Patra Sankalan, Records in Oriental Languages. vol.I Bengali Letters, Calcutta, 1942.

- White, A. - Memoir of the Late David Scott, Esqr.,
edited by Col. Watson, Calcutta, 1832.
- Wilcox, R. - Memoir of the Survey of Assam and the
Neighbouring Countries, executed in
1825-6-7-8, Asiatic Researches,
vol. XVII, 1832.
- Neufville, J.B. - Documents Illustrative of the Burmese
War, Calcutta, 1827.
- Wilson, H.H. - Report from the Indian Law Commission
A Glossary of Judicial and Revenue
Terms etc., London, 1855.
- Parliamentary Papers - Observations on the State of Society
among the Asiatic Subjects of Great
Britain, particularly with respect to
Morals and on the Means of Improving
- B Official Reports and Contemporary Accounts.
- Bhattacharya, J.M. (ed). - Assam Buranji, (in Bengali),
Gauhati, 1962.
(first published in 1829 by the
author himself)
- Pemberton, R.B. - Account of Bootan,
(written in the second decade of the
nineteenth century and translated into
English by D. Scott. Subsequently in-
corporated in Political Missions to
Bootan,) Calcutta, 1865.
- Bose, Baboo Kishen Kant - Political Missions to Bootan,
(comprising the reports of A. Eden,
R.B. Pemberton, Dr. W. Griffiths and
Kishen Kant Bose), Calcutta, 1865.
- Eden, Sir Ashley and others - Edinburgh, 1827.
- Symes, Lt.-Col. Michael, -

- Hunter, Sir William - A Statistical Account of Assam, 2 vols.
London, 1879. *by David Scott, 1826,*
reproduced in Mackenzie's North-East
- Mills, A.J.M. - Reports on the Province of Assam,
Calcutta, 1854.
- Neufville, J.B. - On the Geography and Population of
Assam, Asiatic Researches, vol. XVI,
1828.
C Contemporary Periodicals and other Journals.
- Arunodoi (in Assamese), vol. II, May 1847.*
Parliamentary Papers - Report from the Indian Law Commission
on Slavery in the East Indies, 1841,
Asiatic Journal, 1827, vol. 23.
No. 28.
Asiatic Researches, vol. XVI, 1828.
Assam Review, May 1828.
Bengal : Past and Present, vol. 1.
Calcutta Christian Observer, 1831, 1832, 1833, 1834, 1835.
Observations on the State of Society
among the Asiatic Subjects of Great
Britain, particularly with Respect to
Morals and on the Means of Improving
it, 1812-13, No. 10, paper 282;
1831-32, No. 8, paper 734.
- Pemberton, R.B. - Reports on the Eastern Frontier of
British India, Calcutta, 1835.
Calcutta Review, vols. 19, 21, 23.
Journal of Asiatic Society of Bengal, vol. 5, (1836); vol. XIV, pt. 1,
1837; vol. XVII, (1842).
- Physical and Political Geography of the Province of Assam, Shillong,
1896.
- Monthly Circular Letters Relative to the Administration in India*
Smith Elder & Co. - Assam : Sketch of its History, Soil
vols. 1-21, 1803-1819.
and Productions with the Discovery of
the Tea-Plant and of the Countries
Periodical Accounts of the Serampore Press, 1803-1819.
adjoining Assam, London, 1839.
- Symes, Lt.-Col. Michael, - An Account of an Embassy to the King-
dom of Ava in the Year 1795,
Edinburgh, 1827.

Welsh, T. ~~UNPUBLISHED THESIS~~ -

Report on Assam, 1794, with additional observation by David Scott, 1826, reproduced in Mackenzie's North-East Frontier of Bengal, pp. 377-394.

In the University of London Libr.

Barpujari, H.K.

British Administration in Assam, 1825-1843, with special reference to

C Contemporary Periodicals and other Journals.

on the Frontier;
Ph.D. London, 1949.

Arunudoi (in Assamese), vol. II, May 1847.

Barua, A.C.

Aspects of the Economic Development of Assam Valley, N.E. London, 1960.

Asiatic Journal, 1827, vol. 23.

Asiatic Researches, vol. XVI, 1828.

Tribal District on the South-East Frontier of the Bengal Presidency, 1831-1833. Ph.D. London, 1961.

Assam Review, May 1928.

Bengal : Past and Present. vol. XI. 1829.

Thaung Ma

British Interest in Trans-Burma Trade, 1826-1876. Ph.D. London, 1955.

Calcutta Christian Observer, 1835, 1836, 1837, 1838.

Calcutta Review, vols. 19, 21, 23, 38, 46, 96.

Journal of Asiatic Society of Bengal, vol. V, (1836); vol. XIV, Pt. I, (1845); vol. XVIII (1849).

Monthly Circular Letters Relative to the Missionary in India, vols. I-XI, 1808-1819.

Frontier of India, 1824-1856. D.Phil. Oxford, 1948.

Periodical Accounts of the Serampore Mission, 1819-1834.

III UNPUBLISHED THESES

In the University of London Library.

- Barpujari, H.K. - British Administration in Assam, 1825-1845, with special reference to the Hill-Tribes on the Frontier; Ph.D. London, 1949.
- Allen, B.C. - A History of the Assam Company, Aspects of the Economic Development of Assam Valley, M.A. London, 1960.
- Antrobus, H.A. - Tribe, Caste and Nation, Manchester, Tribal Unrest on the South-West Frontier of the Bengal Presidency, 1831-1833, Ph.D. London, 1961.
- Barua, A.C. - Peasants, Policy and Social Change in Western India, 1817-1830, London, 1957.
- Bailey, F.G. - British Interest in Trans-Burma Trade Routes to China, 1826-1876, Ph.D. London, 1955.
- Jha, J.C. - The Eastern Frontier of British India, 1784-1826, Calcutta, 1946.
- Ballhatchet, K. - Bengal Native Infantry, Calcutta, 1963.
- Thaung Ma - British Policy on the North-East Frontier of India, 1826-1886, D.Phil. Oxford, 1948.
- Banaji, D.B. - Ahom Burani, A chronicle of Assam in the Ahom language, with parallel English translation, Shillong, 1930.
- Banerjee, A.C. - Peasants, Policy and Social Change in Western India, 1817-1830, London, 1957.

In the Bodleian Library, Oxford.

- Barat, A. - Bengal Native Infantry, Calcutta, 1963.
- Gupta, S.S. - British Policy on the North-East Frontier of India, 1826-1886, D.Phil. Oxford, 1948.
- Barton, Sir William - Ahom Burani, A chronicle of Assam in the Ahom language, with parallel English translation, Shillong, 1930.
- Barua, G.C. - Ahom Burani, A chronicle of Assam in the Ahom language, with parallel English translation, Shillong, 1930.

IV OTHER WORKS

- Barua, I. - Jivanadarsa, (short life sketches, in Assamese, of Purnananda Buragohain, Piali Barphukan, Haliram Dhekial
- Ahmad, N. - An Economic Geography of East Pakistan, London, 1958.
- Baveja, J.D. - Across the Golden Heights of Assam
- Allen, B.C. - Monograph on the Silk Cloth of Assam, Shillong, 1899.
- Bearce, G.D. - British Attitude Towards India
- Antrobus, H.A. - A History of the Assam Company, 1839-1853, Edinburg 1957.
- Bertrand, G. - Secret Lands Where Women Reign
- Bailey, F.G. - Tribe, Caste and Nation, Manchester, 1960.
- Bhattacharya, S.N. - A History of Mughal North-East
- Ballhatchet, K. - Social Policy and Social Change in Western India, 1817-1830, London, 1957.
- Bhuyan, S.K. - Anglo-Assamese Relations 1771-1826
- Banaji, D.R. - Slavery in British India, Bombay, 1933.
- Banerjee, A.C. - Ahomer Din (an account of the ad-
The Eastern Frontier of British India, 1784-1826, Calcutta, 1946.
- Barat, A. - Stray Notes on David Scott,
Bengal Native Infantry, Calcutta, 1963
May 1928.
- Barton, Sir William - (ed) India's North-West Frontier,
London, 1939. (Ilton, Ganhati, 1940.
- Barua, G.C. - Assam Buranji, (two metrical
Ahom Buranji, A chronicle of Assam in
the Ahom language, with parallel
English translation, Shillong, 1930.

- Barua, I. - Jivanadarsa, (short life sketches, in Assamese, of Purnananda Buragohain, Piali Barphukan, Haliram Dhekial Phukan etc.), Sibsagar, 1889.
- Baveja, J.D. - Across the Golden Heights of Assam and NEFA, Calcutta, 1961.
- Briggs, A. - The Age of Improvement, 1782-1867.
- Bearce, G.D. - British Attitude Towards India, 1784-1858, Oxford, 1961.
- Burling, R. - Rongsangri. - family and kinship in
- Bertrand, G. - Secret Lands Where Women Reign, 1963. London, 1958.
- Butler, J. - Sketch of Assam, with some account of
- Bhattacharya, S.N. - A History of Mughal North-East Frontier Policy, Calcutta, 1929.
- Bhuyan, S.K. - Anglo-Assamese Relations 1771-1826, Gauhati, 1949.
- Carey, S.P. - Ahomar Din (an account of the administrative system of the Ahoms in Assamese), Jorhat, 1918.
- Carey, W.H. - Stray Notes on David Scott, published in Assam Review, Silchar, May 1928.
- Cartalra, R. - (ed) An Account of Assam by Francis Buchanan-Hamilton, Gauhati, 1940.
- Chatterjee, S.K. - Place of Assam in the History and Assamar Padya Buranji, (two metrical chronicles of Assam by Dutiram Hazarika and Bisweswar Bidyadhipa in Assamese), Gauhati, 1933.
- Cohn, B.S. - graphical essay, New Delhi, 1961.

- Cotton, J.S. - Mount Stuart Elphinstone, Oxford, 1896.
- Dharkar, C.D. - Tungkhungia Buranji or A History of Assam 1601-1826 A.D., being the translation of the Assamese chronicle by Srinath Barbarua, 1671-1806 with additional matter bringing down the history to 1826. Calcutta, 1933.
- Dodwell, H.H. - The Cambridge History of India, vol.V
- Briggs, A. - The Age of Improvement, 1783-1867, London, 1959.
- Burling, R. George - Rengsangeri. - family and kinship in a Garo Village, Philadelphia, 1963.
- Dutt, K.N. - Landmarks of the Freedom Struggle in Assam, Garhhat, 1958.
- Butler, J: - Sketch of Assam, with some account of the Hill-Tribes, London, 1847.
- Edwardes, M. - Travels and Adventures in the Province of Assam. London, 1855.
- Carey, S.P. - William Carey, London, 1934.
- Carey, W.H. - The Good Old Days of Hon'ble John Company, vol. II, Calcutta, 1907.
- Elwin, V. - Nineteenth Century (ed), Bombay, 1959.
- Cartairs, R. - Little World of an Indian District Officer, London, 1912.
- Embree, T.E. - Charles Grant and British Rule in India, London, 1963.
- Chatterjee, S.K. - Place of Assam in the History and Civilization of India, Gauhati, 1955.
- Furber, H. - John Company at Work, Harvard, 1931.
- Cohn, B.S. - The Development and Impact of British Administration in India : a bibliographical essay, New Delhi, 1961.

- Cotton, J.S. - Mount Stuart Elphinstone, Oxford, 1896.
- Dharkar, C.D. - Assam Land Revenue Manual, Shillong, 1946.
- Gleig, G.R. - Lord Macaulay's Legislative Minutes, Mysore, 1946.
- Dodwell, H.H. - Life of Sir Thomas Munro, 3 vols., India, vol. I, London, 1936.
- Goswami, P.C. - The Cambridge History of India, vol.V British India 1497-1858 (ed), Cambridge, 1929.
- Dunbar, Sir George - Frontiers, London, 1932.
- Gurdon, P.R.T. - The Nissis, London, 1914.
- Dutt, K.N. - Landmarks of the Freedom Struggle in Assam, Gauhati, 1958.
- Hannay, S.F. - Shane of Assam, Imphal, 1947.
- Hannay, S.O. - The Necessary Hell - John and Henry Lawrence and the Indian Empire, London, 1958.
- Edwardes, M. - Asia in European Age, 1498-1955, London, 1961.
- Hobbsbawn, E.J. - Report on the Revenue Administration, India's North-East Frontier in the Nineteenth Century (ed), Bombay, 1959.
- Jenkins, F. - A Philosophy for NEFA, Shillong, 1959.
- Elwin, V. - Charles Grant and British Rule in India, London, 1962.
- Embree, T.E. - John Company at Work, Harvard, 1951.
- Furber, H. - Cooh Behar, Calcutta, 1868.

- Gait, Sir Edward - A History of Assam, Calcutta, 1926.
Assam Land Revenue Manual, S. Shillong, 1896.
- Johri, S. - Where India, China and Burma Meet,
 Gleig, G.R. - Life of Sir Thomas Munro, 3 vols.,
 London, 1830.
- Kaye, J.W. - The Administration of the East India
 Goswami, P.C. - Economic Development of Assam,
 Calcutta, 1963.
- Khan Chaudhury, A.A. - A History of Cooch Behar (in Bengali),
 Gurdon, P.R.T. - The Khasis, London, 1914.
- Hannay, S.F. - Shans of Assam, Jeypore, 1947.
 1954.
- Hannay, S.O. - A Short Account of the Moa-Morah Sect,
 Lamb, A. - J.A.S.B. Aug. 1838. Central Asia,
 London, 1960.
- Hobsbawm, E.J. - Primitive Rebels, Manchester, 1959.
- Leonard, J. - A Letter on the Discovery and
 Jenkins, F. - Report on the Revenue Administration,
 1849-50, selection of the Records of
 the Bengal Government, No. XI,
 Calcutta, 1853.
- Lish, Rev. A.B. - Report on the Progress and Prosperity
of the Province of Assam, Mill's
 Report on Assam, 1854, App. B.
- Lord Lindsay - Report on the Disturbances in the
Garro Hills, Mill's Report, App. N.
Diary and Notes of Proceedings in
Cooch Behar, Calcutta, 1868.

- M' Cosh, J. - Topography of Assam, Calcutta, 1837.
Journal of a Tour in Upper Assam,
 1838, (typed Mss in S.O.A.S. Library)
- Majumdar, N. - Justice and Police in Bengal,
 Calcutta, 1960.
- Johri, S. - Where India China and Burma Meet,
 Calcutta, 1962.
- Malcolm, Sir John - The Government of India, London, 1873.
- Kaye, J.W. - The Administration of the East India
 Martin, R.B. Company, London, 1853. Topography
and Statistics of the Eastern India,
 vol. 3, London, 1838.
- Khan Chaudhury, A.A. - A History of Cooch Behar (in Bengali),
 Cooch Behar, 1936.
- Mathai, J. - Village Government in British India,
 London, 1915.
- Lahiri, R.M. - The Annexation of Assam, Calcutta,
 1954.
- Memorandum on the Revenue Administration of the Lower Provinces of
Bengal, 1877, Calcutta, 1873.
- Lamb, A. - Britain and Chinese Central Asia,
 London, 1960.
- Misra, B.B. - The Central Administration of the
East India Company, Manchester, 1879.
- Leonard, J. - A Letter on the Discovery and
Character of the Indigenous Tea Plant
in Assam, London, 1939.
- Morris, J.H. - The History of the Welsh Calvinistic
Methodists' Foreign Mission, (the
 relevant extracts from the book were
 kindly supplied by Rev. A. J. Evans,
 the General Secretary of the Presby-
 terian Church of Wales' Foreign
 Mission).
- Lish, Rev. A.B. - A Brief Account of the Khasis,
 Calcutta Christian Observer, March
 1838.
- Lord Lindsay - Lives of the Lindsays; or A Memoir
of the Houses of Crawford and
Balcarres, vol. III, London 1849.
- Muir, B. - The History of the House of Balcarres, 1756-1858
 London, 1915.

- M'Cosh, J. - Topography of Assam, Calcutta, 1837.
- Majumdar, N. - Justice and Police in Bengal, Calcutta, 1960.
- Malcolm, Sir John - The Government of India, London, 1833.
- Martin, R.B. - The History, Antiquities, Topography and Statistics of the Eastern India, vol. 3, London, 1838.
- Mathai, J. - Village Government in British India, London, 1915.
- Memorandum on the Revenue Administration of the Lower Provinces of Bengal. 1873, Calcutta, 1873.
- Misra, B.B. - The Central Administration of the East India Company, Manchester, 1959.
- Morris, J.H. - The History of the Welsh Calvinistic Methodists' Foreign Mission, (the relevant extracts from the book were kindly supplied by Rev.R.Emrys Evans, the General Secretary of the Presbyterian Church of Wales' Foreign Mission).
- Muir, R. - The Making of British India. 1756-1858 Manchester, 1915.

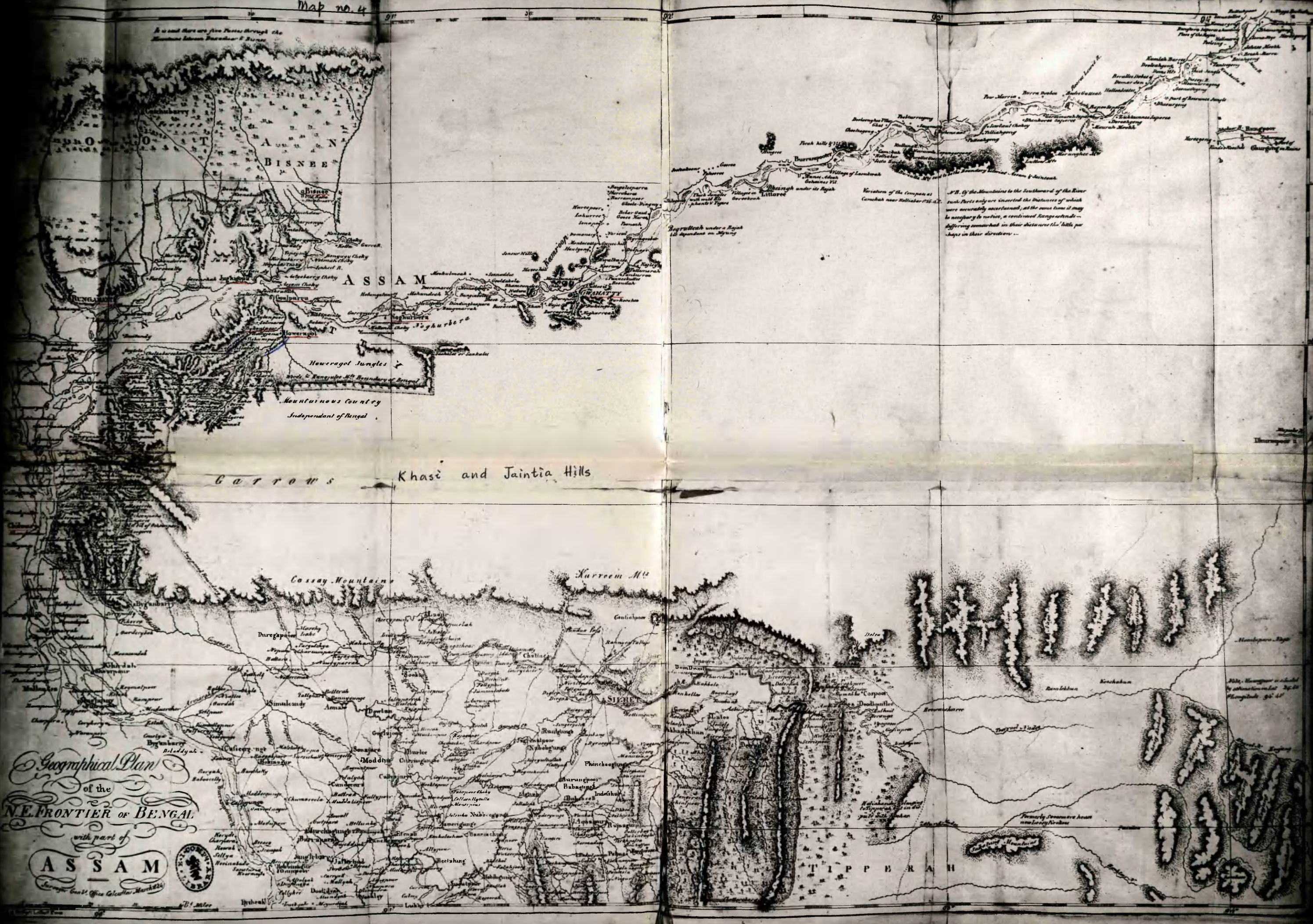
- O'Malley, L.S.S. The Records of Bengal - Modern India and the West, London, 1941.
- Shakespear, L.W. - History of Bengal, Bihar and Orissa under British Rule, Calcutta, 1925.
- Panikkar, K.M. - A Survey of Indian History, Bombay, 1957. Traveller and Missionary, London, 1887.
- Phukan, A.D. - Observation on the Administration of the Province of Assam, Mill's Report, App. J.
- Stokes, E. - English Militarism and India.
- Phukan K. and Barua, R. - Assam Buranji Puthi (Assamese), Sibsagar, 1844.
- Sword, V.H. - Baptists in Assam, Chicago, 1935.
- Richardson, H.E. - Tibet and Its History, London, 1962.
- Wade, J.P. - An Account of Assam, North Lakhimpur.
- Robinson, W. - A Descriptive Account of Assam, Calcutta, 1841.
- Ward, Sir William E. - Notes on Assam Land Revenue System.
- Ronaldshy, Earl of - Lands of the Thunderbolt. Sikkim, Chumbi and Bhutan, Bombay, 1923.
- White, A. - Considerations on the State of
- Roy, J. - The History of Manipur, Calcutta, 1958.

Selection of Papers (1825-46) Regarding the Hill Tribes Between Assam and Burma and on the Upper Brahmaputra
Calcutta, 1873. London, 1827.

Selection from the Records of Bengal Government. No. XI. Calcutta, 1853.

- Shakespear, L.W. - History of Upper Assam, Upper Burma and North-East Frontier, London, 1914.
- Smith, G. - The Life of William Carey, D.D. Shoemaker and Missionary, London, 1887.
- Spear, P. - India. A Modern History, Michigan, 1961.
- Stokes, E. - English Utilitarians and India, Oxford, 1959.
- Sword, V.H. - Baptists in Assam, Chicago, 1935.
- Wade, J.P. - An Account of Assam, North Lakhimpur, 1927.
- Ward, Sir William E. - Notes on Assam Land Revenue System, Shillong, 1897.
- White, A. - Considerations on the State of British India, Edinburgh, 1822.
- White, W. - A Political History of the Extraordinary Events Which Led to the Burmese War, London, 1827.

- Wilson, H.H. - Historical Sketch of the Burmese War,
prefixed to his Documents, Calcutta,
1827.
- Woodman, D. - The Making of Burma, London, 1962.
- Woodruff, P. - The Men Who Ruled India, Part I,
The Founders, London, 1953.



David Scott on the North East
Frontier of India and in Assam

Ph.D.
1964

by
N. K. Barooah.

Map No. 4